

THE TEACHINGS OF
LORD MAHĀVĪRA

[ŚRĪ-MAHĀVĪRA-VACANĀMṚTAM]

COMPILED BY

Pandit Dhirañjālī Shāh
Śvētashālik, Gajaga-Patanjali etc.

Translated into English

BY
N. V. VAIDYA, M. A.

Reviewed

BY
Dr. S. M. KATRE, M. A., Ph. D.

Publisher NARENDRAKUMAR D SHAH
For Sri Mahavira Vacanāmṣta Pracāra-
Samiti Bombay
Ladhabhai Gunpat Building Chinchbunder
Bombay-9

All Rights Reserved

1967

Printer Shri D V AMBEKAR Aryabhushan Press
915/1 Shivajinagar Poona-4

We take this opportunity to thank the members of the Committee and all those who offered us their unstinted co-operation.

As decided earlier we will shortly arrange to send this publication free to learned scholars in India and abroad

Jayant Mahal
Churchgate D Road }
Bombay 1
12-5-67

Ramanlal N Parikh
Chairman
Sri Mahāvira Vacanāmṛta
Pracāra Samiti.

History of the Prakrit Literature etc. Then there are hardly any Scholarships and Prizes in the Colleges and Universities for this particular subject the only notable exception being the one Scholarship instituted long ago in the Bombay University at the Intermediate Arts Examination.

I therefore take this opportunity of making an earnest request and fervent appeal to the Jain community—which is one of the most enlightened religious-minded and well to do communities in India—to remedy this state of affairs I have during the course of my teaching career approached a number of individuals as well as Institutions and organisations but I am constrained to confess that I have not succeeded in my efforts.

Śrī Mahāvīravacanāmṛtam is a modest attempt to place before the English-reading public a small compendium or a general outline of the Teachings of Lord Mahāvīra culled from the Jain Āgama or canonical texts. Śrī Dhvajlal Shah has already published this work with Hindi and Gujarati translations. When he approached me with a request that I should undertake to edit the English version of the same I accepted his suggestion most willingly. But it should be noted that this is not a translation of the Hindi Edition.

I have made liberal use of the works of H. Jacobi (S. B. E.) Dr P. L. Vaidya, Prof. K. V. Abhyankar, Prof. N. G. Suru, Dr. A. N. Upadhye and other scholars as well as the commentarial material on various texts. My grateful thanks to all of them.

I am deeply indebted to Dr. S. M. Katre for having consented to write a Foreword to this work. Saddled as he is with the gigantic work of the Great Sanskrit Dictionary it was really very kind of him.

to have spared some time for me On behalf of myself and the committee, I offer him our grateful thanks

I am also grateful to the committee, and to Shri Dhurajlal Shah particularly, for having given me this opportunity to associate myself in this worthy cause of the spread of Jainology I shall feel amply rewarded if this modest effort will be of some use in the proper understanding and appraisal of Jainism

Lastly, I would like to conclude with the words of Acārya Śrī Haribhadrasūri —

पक्षपातो न मे वीरे न द्वेषः कपिलादिषु ।

युक्तिमद् वचनं यत् स्यात्तस्य कार्यः परिग्रहः ॥

I have no predilection for the words of (Mahā) Vīra, nor do I despise (the views of) Kapila and the rest The words (views) which appeal to reason—they alone should be accepted

Fergusson College,
Poona 4
Śrī Mahāvīra Jayantī,
April 1967

}

N. V. Vaidya

History of the Prakrit Literature etc. Then there are hardly any Scholarships and Prizes in the Colleges and Universities for this particular subject the only notable exception being the one Scholarship instituted long ago in the Bombay University at the Intermediate Arts Examination.

I therefore take this opportunity of making an earnest request and fervent appeal to the Jain community—which is one of the most enlightened religious-minded and well to do communities in India—to remedy this state of affairs. I have during the course of my teaching career approached a number of individuals as well as Institutions and organisations but I am constrained to confess that I have not succeeded in my efforts.

Śrī Mahāvīravacanāmr̥cam is a modest attempt to place before the English reading public a small compendium or a general outline of the Teachings of Lord Mahāvīra culled from the Jain Āgama or canonical texts. Śrī Dharmajī Śah has already published this work with Hindi and Gujarati translations. When he approached me with a request that I should undertake to edit the English version of the same I accepted his suggestion most willingly. But it should be noted that this is not a translation of the Hindi Edition.

I have made liberal use of the works of H. Jacobi (S. B. E.) Dr. P. L. Vaidya Prof. K. V. Abhyankar Prof. N. G. Sarda Dr. A. N. Upadhye and other scholars as well as the commentarial material on various texts. My grateful thanks to all of them.

I am deeply indebted to Dr. S. M. Katre for having consented to write a Foreword to this work. Saddled as he is with the gigantic work of the Great Sanskrit Dictionary it was really very kind of him

to have spared some time for me. On behalf of myself and the committee, I offer him our grateful thanks

I am also grateful to the committee, and to Shri Dhiraajlal Shah particularly, for having given me this opportunity to associate myself in this worthy cause of the spread of Jainology. I shall feel amply rewarded if this modest effort will be of some use in the proper understanding and appraisal of Jainism.

Lastly, I would like to conclude with the words of Acārya Śrī Haribhadrasūri —

पक्षपातो न मे कीरे न द्वेषः कपिलादिषु ।

युक्तिमद् वचनं यत् स्यात्तस्य कार्यः परिग्रहः ॥

I have no predilection for the words of (Mahā) Vira, nor do I despise (the views of) Kapila and the rest. The words (views) which appeal to reason—they alone should be accepted.

Fergusson College,
Poona 4
Śrī Mahāvīra Jayantī,
April 1967

N. V. Vaidya

FOREWORD

In a significant statement the Vedic seer expresses his view about Truth being one, but defined in various shades and colours by the initiated. It is indeed in this sense that the great religious teachers of India have revived the original significance of the eternal Aryan tradition whenever it was in the danger of losing its moorings. In this recurring pattern of revitalisation and revivification Bhagavān Mahāvira, a senior contemporary of Bhagavān Buddha, has contributed in a unique manner. Like his contemporary Bhagavān Buddha, Bhagavān Mahāvira spoke to the people in their own tongues and not in a sacerdotal medium which had become the sole means of communication in meaningless religious rites and rituals. Buddhism spread outside India carrying its message to distant Thailand, Burma and Ceylon through the medium of Pali and in Central Asia through a special medium which Professor Edgerton has designated Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit and a host of dialects which are related to the Indo-European family of languages beginning with Tocharian and Old Iranian. The tradition represented by Bhagavān Mahāvira, however, found expression within the subcontinent itself, first revitalising the literature and arts of peninsular India; the earliest representative literature in Tamil and other Dravidian languages stem from the inspiration which is drawn directly from the teachings of Mahāvira. The languages or dialects of the people which became the medium of communication fashioned by the teachings of Mahāvira constitute, in northern India, the major group of Middle and Modern Indo-Aryan languages, while the earliest efflorescence in Dravidian owes its origin to the inspiration and teachings of

Mahāvīra It is in this sense that the spirit of Bhagavan Mahāvīra survives in this subcontinent apart from the art and culture monuments which testify to the living touch of the Master

The teachings of the Lord preserved in the Jaina canon have been elaborated later in Prakrit and to a greater extent in later Sanskrit literature. Having their origin in the common languages with the rise of the great empires Sanskrit also became a regular vehicle of expression and corresponding to Buddhist Hybrid Sanskrit we have also a Jain Hybrid Sanskrit which is the nearest approach to spoken Sanskrit untrammelled by the prescriptive restrictions of scholastic grammars. But it is primarily in Ardhamagadhī that the original teachings have been faithfully preserved and transmitted. Like Pali and Sanskrit Ardhamagadhī and other Middle Indo Aryan languages in which many of these teachings are preserved are ordinarily beyond the reach of those who have not made a special study of these languages. Though structurally these are simpler than Sanskrit their study involves a special effort less strenuous than that required for Sanskrit but along with the slow disappearance of this language from the school curriculum these also are on the verge of loss to the great detriment for the development of our national languages. It is particularly in this context that a selection of the gems of such teachings culled from many parts of the Canon and presented neatly in a subject-wise arranged group with English translation may be regarded as a welcome contribution not only to Indian literature but also to world literature. The significant fact that English here functions as a link world language to bring the message of Bhagavān Mahāvīra both to people in India and outside is an indication of the place it has carved for itself in the

community of nations. It is, therefore, appropriate that a selection of the salient teachings of the Master should be available to any world citizen both in its original garb and in its new dress, designed to illumine the dark corners of our intellect and spirit and take us on the true path at a time when our scientific and technical advances have taken us to the very brink of self-destruction. The teachings adumbrated in this selection indicate the manner in which we first reform ourselves in order that the world order itself may be changed towards a saner and more tolerant way of life, through self-abnegation we may realise our true Self and thus revitalise the physical and material consciousness of the world. The appearance of this selection in its present form is timely and let me hope that the message it contains will reach every nook and corner of this earth for it is noble and timeless and the greatest of men have practised it and achieved miracles of transformation. In our own time the father of our nation, Mahatma Gandhi, has demonstrated in his life and teachings the force of truth which lives in this teaching and revitalised this country. But more needs to be done if the world is to be saved from the Frankenstein that our science and technology have created, we have lost our souls and have to rediscover the Truth which lives embedded in us, the way of life indicated by these scintillating verses will unfold that kingdom of heaven which must be established here and now in this world. I am sure that the publication of such a collection will greatly assist a citizen of the world to be a true world citizen and discover the Truth within himself.

23	Pramāda Carelessness	162
24	Kasayas Passions	170
25	Bala and Paṇḍita The Ignorant and the Wise	175
26	A True Brahmana	178
27	Virya Exertion or Energy	183
28	Samyaktva Righteousness	188
29	Bhāvanā Reflections	193
30	Leśyas	199
31	Mṛtyu Death	205
32	Para-bhava Rebirth	210
33	Naraka-Vedanā Tortures in Hell	220
34	Śikṣapada Discipline	225

Abbreviations

अव०	अवधूति
आचा०	आचारानन्दसूत्र (आगमोदयसमिति)
ड० or	दत्तराध्यायनसूत्र Ed by
वत्०	Prof R D. Vadekar & Prof N V Vaidya, Poona
औ०	औरपातिसूत्र Ed by Prof N G Suru, Poona
जीवा०	जीवानीवाग्मिगमप्रतिपत्तिसूत्र (आगमोदयसमिति)
दश०	दशवैकालिकसूत्र Ed. by Prof K V Abhyankar, Poona
चू०	चूर्णि or चूर्णिका
दशा०	दशा गुणरत्नसूत्र (आगमोदयसमिति)
नादा०	नादावन्मन्त्राओ Ed by N V Vaidya, Poona
प्रद०	प्रदव्याकरणसूत्र (आगमोदयसमिति)
प्रपा०	प्रपायनासूत्र (" ")
भग०	भगवत्सूत्र (" ")
नग०	नगवर्णाक्ष
सम०	समवायादसूत्र (आगमोदयसमिति)
गू०	गूढतान्त्रसूत्र (श्रीगोडीपार्श्वजैनप्रबन्धालय Bombay)
स्थाना०	स्थानान्तर (आगमोदयसमिति)

The Universe

जीवा चेव अजीवा य एस लोए विद्याहिण ।

अजीवदेसमागासे अलोए से विद्याहिण ॥ १ ॥

(उ० ३६२)

1 The World (Loka) is said to be that which consists of living beings as well as non-living substances (matter). But that wherein only a part of the non-living things, viz *Ākāśa* or space exists, is called Non-world (Aloka).

Exp This Universe of ours is divided into two parts (1) Loka or World, and (2) Aloka or Non-world. The world is pervaded with *Jīva* i. e. living or sentient beings, as well as *Ajīva* i. e. non-living substances, or matter. The Aloka or the Non-world consists entirely of *Ākāśa* or space and nothing else

धम्मो अहम्मो आगासं कालो पुग्गलजंतवो ।

एस लोगो सि पजत्तो जिणेहि वरदंसिहि ॥ २ ॥

(उ० २८७)

2. The Omniscient Jinas have laid down that the world is made up of Dharma, Adharma, Space, Time, Matter, and Souls (living beings).

Exp It has already been explained above that the world consists of living beings and non living substances i.e. matter. There are, in all, six fundamental substances in this world five of them are non-sentient, and one only is living or sentient. The living or sentient comes last simply because numerically the non sentient substances are more in number.

The five non sentient substances are as follows -

- (1) Dharma or Dharmastikāya
- (2) Adharma or Adharmastikāya
- (3) Ākāśa or Ākāśastikāya
- (4) Kāla or Time
- (5) Pudgala or Pudgalastikāya Matter

It should be noted that the terms Dharma and Adharma have a peculiar significance in Jain metaphysics. Ordinarily the terms Dharma and Adharma stand for merit and demerit i.e. Punya and Pāpa in other systems of philosophy but here they mean the *fulcrum of motion and rest* respectively something that allows things to remain in motion or facilitates motion and rest or inertia.

Out of these six substances the five are said to be Astikāyas, because these substances comprise of, or possess spatial units, while Kāla is one without any spatial units. It is one—indivisible—unit, and hence it is not an Astikāya.

These six substances are said to be eternal and everlasting, i.e. they are not created by any outside

agency or any Creator, nor are they liable to be completely destroyed. Of course they are liable to change or mutation. And hence it is that the universe, though eternal or permanent, still does undergo change or evolution.

It is remarkable and noteworthy that at a time when a Personal Creator, endowed with omniscience, omnipotence, and omnipresence was held responsible for the creation of the universe, Lord Mahāvīra advanced such a bold, startling, and at the same time a scientific thesis.

घम्भो अहम्भो आगासं दद्वं शक्किमाहिं ।

अणंताणि य द्वाणि कालो पुग्गलजंतवो ॥ ३ ॥

(३० 288)

3 Dharma, Adharma, and Space are each of them said to be one (indivisible) substance only, but Time, Matter and Souls are an infinite number of substances.

Exp The substance Dharma pervades the whole world in one undivided or continuous form, and hence it is one. Though we can, intellectually, divide it into parts, in reality it is not capable of being divided into different parts. The same holds good for the substance Adharma also. But Kāla (time), Matter and the Souls,—these three are infinite in number, with the result that these substances cannot be enumerated or counted, i. e. they are innumerable or infinite. But it should be borne in mind here, that normally the philosophers name all those things

which cannot be (humanly or physically) counted, i.e. which are **असंख्य**—countless or innumerable,—as infinite. But the Jain seers of yore have subdivided this category of innumerables under two heads viz. (1) **असंख्यात** and (2) **अनन्त**. The latter sub-division far too exceeds the former.

गल्लक्षणी उ धर्मो अहर्मो ठाणलक्षणी ।

भायणं सच्चद्वयणं नह ओगाहलक्षणी ॥ ४ ॥

(उ० 28-9)

4 The characteristic (mark) of Dharma is motion that of Adharma is immobility or stationariness, and that of space (**Ākasa**), — which is the receptacle for all the other substances,—is to make room (for everything in the world)

Exp In order to understand thoroughly every individual substance, we must be conversant with its distinguishing or characteristic features. Hence the definitions and the enumeration of the individual characteristics of each of the substances are enumerated here —

Dharma-dravya —This substance is characterised by motion. In other words, it is the substance which enables or facilitates movement of substances, sentient or non-sentient (mobile (**गन्तव्य**), i.e. which can move on its own free will, where is the need to imagine the aid of another su-

The answer is, just as the fish, though endowed with an innate or natural faculty of swimming, cannot swim in the absence of water, even so, animate or inanimate substances, though possessing the faculty or power of motion, cannot use that power without the aid or presence of this substance, viz Dharma (the fulcrum of motion). Even modern science has proved that any object that moves in space (Ākāśa) can do so only with the help of ether (Scientists are not unanimous regarding the exact nature of ether, but there is every reason to believe, that they are tending towards the acceptance of the substance of Dharma gradually).

Adharma-dravya — This is characterised by immobility or stationariness. In other words, those sentient or non-sentient substances that remain stationary or immobile of their own accord, can do so only with the help of this substance, e.g. though a human being has the power or faculty to remain stationary or immobile, still he needs the presence of a chair, a bed or a seat. Or just as a traveller, when he wants to rest, seeks a shelter, or the shade of a tree.

Dharma and Adharma pervade only the world (and not the Aloka). And so, mobility and immobility, on the part of any sentient or non-sentient substance is possible only in the Loka or world, and not beyond it, i.e. in the Aloka — outer space, or non-world.

Ākāśa-dravya —The characteristic trait of this substance is to give room. In other words, it makes room within itself for all the substances in the world. And that is why all the objects in the world, mobile or immobile, are contained in the Ākāśa. That portion of the Ākāśa (space), which pervades the world, is termed as Lokākāśa (space), and that which is beyond or outside the world (Loka), is termed as Alokākāśa or outer space.

To sum up Dharma-dravya is the principle or medium of motion Adharma is the principle or medium of rest and Ākāśa or Space, — giving room

वसणालवखणो कालो जीवो उवओगलवखणो ।
नाणेणं देसणेणं च सुहेण य इहेण य ॥ ५ ॥

(उ 28 10)

5 The characteristic of Time is duration (वर्तना) or modification or revolving; that of Soul — the realisation (अवरोण) or consciousness of knowledge, perception, happiness, and misery

Exp Time has, as its characteristic, duration, continuance or modification. If we wish to ascertain the duration or modification of any object in this world, we can do so only by reference to, or in relation to Time; e.g. we say 'This thing exists' 'This thing was' or 'This thing will be' — all these forms of speech are only in relation to the time-factor, or time-element

It should also be borne in mind, that when we refer to any action, change, or modification, the primary factor, or the main cause is (the element of) Time. No action or modification can take place, in this world, without the aid or presence of Time. Every small or great action, every change or modification presupposes the presence of Time, e.g. visiting a saint, or going to the theatre, reading books, and the very process of human existence, — conception, birth, childhood, youth, and age, — all these are based on Time. Time is a substance without corporeal form (Amūrta). And that is why it cannot be perceived or touched. In reality, Time is indivisible and one whole unit. But conventionally, and for our daily convenience, it has been divided into the following units in the Jain scriptures. —

- | | |
|-----------------------------------------------------|-------------------------|
| (1) The smallest or indivisible unit of time | .. 1 Samaya. |
| (2) Countless or innumerable Samayas | . 1 Āvahkā |
| (3) Numerous (lit. counted i.e. countable) Āvalikās | .. 1 Śwāsa (one breath) |
| (4) Two Śwāsas (breaths) | . 1 Prāna |
| (5) Seven Prānas | ... 1 Stoka |
| (6) Seven Stokas | ... 1 Lava |
| (7) Seventy-seven Lavas | ... 1 Mūhūrta |

(8) Thirty Muhūrtas	1 Day (Twenty-four hours)
(9) Fifteen days	1 Pakṣa
(10) Two Pakṣas (fortnights)	1 Month
(11) Two months	1 Season
(12) Three seasons	1 Ayana
(13) Two Ayanas	1 Samvatsara or Year
(14) Hundred years	1 Century
(15) Ten centuries	1000 Years
(16) Eighty four hundred thousand years	1 Pūrvāṅga
(17) Eighty-four lak pūrvāṅgas	1 Pūrva
(Thus one Pūrva consists of 70560000000000 years)	

The ancient seers have calculated figures even beyond these. But as figures are of no avail in calculating and arriving at those figures they have resorted to स्मृति, or certain formulae or comparisons. Thus, if you have a well, one yojana (eight miles), in length, one yojana in breadth (circumference), and one yojana deep, and fill it with extremely fine human hair and press them down in such a manner that even if an army were to march over it the hair would not go down, and then if you were to empty that well by taking out one piece of hair at an interval of hundred years, then the time required to empty

the well constitutes one Palyopamā. Ten crores into ten crores of Palyopamās constitute one Sāgaropamā. Twenty crores into twenty crores of Sāgaropamās make one Kālacakra, and countless (innumerable) Kālacakras make one Pudgalaparāvarta.

There are six seasons (ṛgṣ) in one year—Hemanta, Śiśira (winter), Vasanta (spring), Grīṣma (summer), Varsā (rainy), and Śarad (autumn). There are two Ayanas—Dakṣiṇāyana and Uttarāyana.

Jīva.—The soul has, as its characteristic, Upayoga, i.e. consciousness or realisation, i.e. the soul is endowed with the faculty of perception and knowledge. Darśana or perception is knowing an object in its outline, and Jñāna is knowing an object in all its details or thoroughly.

How can one know (the existence of) the Soul? Or what is Soul? That substance, or that which has the faculties of perceiving and knowing, and that which is capable of experiencing pleasure and pain, (happiness and misery), is the Soul (living substance). We can perceive and know, and we can also experience happiness and misery. Therefore, we are living beings. Animals, birds, beasts, worms, and insects also have the faculty of perception and knowledge, and are also subject to the sensation of pleasure and pain. Therefore they also are living beings. Even the plants, trees etc.,—fauna and flora— are also capable of experiencing pain and pleasure, and are, therefore, endowed with Soul—i.e. they are also living.

Siddhas The Liberated Souls

संसारत्या य सिद्धा य इविहा जीवा वियाहिया ।
 सिद्धा जेगविहा बुत्ता त मे कित्तयओ सुण॥१॥
 (३ 36 48)

1 The living beings are said to be of two kinds —
 (1) *Samsarastha* — those still belonging to the *samsāra* or worldly existence, and (2) The *Siddhas* — the liberated or perfected souls. The latter are of many kinds. Hear me explain them.

Exp In this world there are infinite number of souls. They are broadly divided into two categories (1) those belonging to the worldly existence, and (2) the liberated or perfected souls. Those living beings who, as a result of their past *Karman*—actions—are subjected to the cycle of births, deaths, and rebirths in this worldly existence and are reborn again and again in one of the four states of existence, —viz hellish beings lower animals, human beings or divine beings,—are souls belonging to *Samsāra* or the worldly existence while those who as a result of their having annihilated all their *karman*, free themselves from all bondages, and have crossed this ocean of worldly existence are the *Siddhas*—liberated or perfected souls. These *Siddha* souls are of different types. They are described below —

इत्थीपुरिससिद्धा य तदेव य नपुंसगा ।

सल्लिगे अबल्लिगे य मिहिल्लिगे तदेव य ॥ २ ॥

(३० 36-49)

2 The perfected souls are those of women, men, as well as hermaphrodites, of orthodox (Jain ascetics), heterodox (heretics), as well as of householders

Exp. Once the souls have attained Siddhi—liberation or perfection—then they are all similar, there is no distinction whatsoever But they are not of the same type at the time of attaining liberation The different kinds of perfected souls are described here only to point out the distinction prior to the attainment of liberation

Souls, subject to the four-fold state of existence in this world, can attain liberation only as human beings, and in no other state of existence (not even as celestial beings) So the following description of the types of Siddhas refers only to their last birth as human beings Human beings are of three kinds, according to their sex (1) Female, (2) male, and (3) hermaphrodite (eunuchs) A human being belonging to any of these three types can attain liberation, e.g. Candanabālā — a female, Ilācikumāra (Ilaputta)—a male, and Gāngeya—a hermaphrodite, all attained liberation In short, sex is no bar in the attainment of liberation Whosoever annihilates all the karmas, necessarily attains Mokṣa — liberation. Normally a human being attains liberation as a Jain monk (२१०) But there are some exceptions to this

i.e. the medium or principle of motion is present. It cannot move or go on beyond that, and so it comes to a halt as soon as the soul reaches the top of the world—i.e. on the boundary of Aloka or Non-world. If the soul were supposed to continue its movement beyond Loka, where Dharmastikaya or the principle of motion, does not exist, then it will have a permanent motion and will never come to rest. And as Ākāśa or space is infinite, the soul then will go on moving till infinity and this will be an untenable or ridiculous position.

The soul, therefore, that is moving upwards, comes to a standstill on reaching the top of the world. Having arrived to the highest point of the world (Lokagra) it remains stationary there and that is the permanent abode of the perfected or liberated souls. It stays there forever.

The soul about to or on the point of, attaining perfection, discards the body here—in this world and when the soul reaches the top of the world, then only it is said to have attained perfection. So the term ' Siddha ', should be understood to mean ' one who has reached the top of the world '.

The souls that have attained perfection are on par with the Arhats or Tirthaṅkaras,—the highest souls, and deserve, therefore, the same regard respect and honour, as is shown to the Divine Arhats. (In the famous Pañca-Paramesthi-Mantra the Siddhas come next to the Arhats)

अरूढिणो जीवघणा नाणदंसणसाणिया ।

अडलं सुहं संपत्ता उवमा जस्स नत्थि उ ॥ ५ ॥

(उ० 36 66)

5 They (i.e. the Siddhas) have no (visible) form, they are fully constituted of life (without any matter), are developed into (perfect) knowledge and perception, and they attain paramount happiness which admits of no comparison (whatsoever)

Exp The terms pleasure, happiness, etc as we use them are all relative terms It is not even possible for us mortals to conceive and imagine the perfect and supreme bliss of the Siddhas It defies all description

अत्थि एगं धुवं ठाणं लोगगंमि दुरासुहं ।

जत्थ नत्थि जरा मच्चू वाहिणो वेयणा तथा ॥ ६ ॥

(उ० 23 81)

6 There is one place, on top of the world, which is eternal (changeless), but very difficult to reach, and where there is no old age, nor death, nor disease, nor pain

निब्बाणं ति अवाहं ति सिद्धी लोगगमेव य ।

खेमं सिवं अणात्राहं जं चरंति महेसिणो ॥ ७ ॥

(उ० 23 83)

7 This place is (variously known as (1) Nirvāṇa (Mokṣa or salvation), (2) (absolute) freedom from pain, (3) perfection, (4) the top of the world, (5) a place of (perfect) safety, (absolute) happiness, and completely free from any disturbance, or very quiet and peaceful, (only) the great sages reach it

त ठाणं सास्यं वासं लोकागमि दुरारुहः ।

जं संपत्ता न सोयति भवोद्वेगकरा मुनी ॥ ८ ॥

(उ 23.84)

8 That place is the eternal abode, situated on top of the world, and very difficult to reach (climb) Those sages, who have put an end to the stream of worldly existence, are (absolutely) free from sorrow and misery, once they have reached that place

Exp This world is but a temporary abode and we are all like travellers. But the souls that reach the Siddha-salā, have reached their journey's end and reside there permanently in perfect calm, bliss, and happiness.

[III]

Jīva : The Soul

संसारत्या उ जे जीवा इविहा ते बियाहिया ।

तसा य थावरा चेव थावरा तिविहा तर्हि ॥ १ ॥

(उ० 36 68)

1 Living beings which still belong to the saṁsāra (worldly existence) are of two kinds —(1) Trasa- or mobile, and (2) Sthāvara- or immobile The latter are of three types

पृथ्वी आउजीवा य तहेव य वणस्सई ।

दृच्छन्ते थावरा तिविहा एसि भए सुणेह मे ॥ २ ॥

(उ० 36 69)

2 (1) Earth-lives, (2) Water-lives and (3) Plant-lives, these are the three kinds of immobile living beings, now hear from me their subdivisions

Exp Earth-lives are those that possess earth bodies, Water-lives possess water-bodies, and Plant-lives possess plant bodies These three types constitute the Sthāvara or immobile living beings

इविहा पृथ्वीजीवा य सुहुमा वायरा तहा ।

पञ्चतमपञ्चत्ता एवमेण इहा पुणो ॥ ३ ॥

(उ० 36 70)

3 The Earth lives are of two kinds —(1) Sūkṣma or subtle, and (2) Bīḍara- or gross Each of them

is again of two types, viz (1) Paryapta—those that have obtained the necessary material powers to exist, and (2) Aparyapta—those that have not obtained the necessary material powers to exist

Exp By Sukṣma or subtle are meant such minute living beings that are never visible to the (naked) eye, and can never be grasped, or even harmed by any means or weapons etc. Such subtle living bodies pervade the whole world (लोक) Bādara means gross, but a single gross Earth-bodied living being is also not perceptible to the (naked) eye. The gross Earth-bodied living being that we perceive is a mass of many Earth-bodied living beings. It is perceptible only collectively and never singly

The living being belonging to this world in its oblique movement —(as opposed to the upward movement of the liberated soul) — goes on assimilating matter which is necessary and essential for its existence. This process or activity is technically called **आहार**—absorption of matter or material particles

By this process (of absorption of material particles) the soul, or the living being forms or builds up its body, sense-organs, respiratory system, faculty of speech, and mind. Technically these six constitute the perfect development (पर्याप्त) But it is not given to all the worldly living beings to possess all the six constituents of perfect development. The one-sensed living beings possess only the following four viz nourishment, body-building, one sense-organ, and

respiratory system. Living beings possessing two to five sense-organs, and (असंज्ञी) i.e. those not endowed with mind,—possess only the five-fold development (excluding mind), while the rational living beings (संज्ञी) alone are capable of developing all the six

It is also possible to divide the worldly living beings on the basis of the sense-organs they possess. Accordingly we get the following five sub-divisions —

- (1) Ekendriya—One-sensed living beings.
- (2) Dvīndriya—Two-sensed living beings
- (3) Trīndriya—Three-sensed living beings
- (4) Caturindriya—Four-sensed living beings,
- (5) Pañcendriya—Five-sensed living beings

The first i.e. the Ekendriya living beings have only one sense organ, viz. that of touch. They can be conscious of it only through the medium of 'skin'. The second type, touch and taste. The latter is possible only with the help of the tongue. The third type, in addition to the first two, have the sense of smell with the help of the olfactory sense (ग्राह) . The fourth, in addition to the first three, have the sense of sight ('perception'), which is possible only with the help of eyes. The fifth type have, in addition to the four, the sense of hearing which is possible with the aid of the hearing organ viz. the ears.

The one-sensed living beings are capable of developing only the first four qualities. So they are termed as fully developed *only* when they have acquired

these four वर्गसि (developments or faculties) They are termed as undeveloped if they have not fully acquired the four faculties, or if they die before acquiring them The Earth-bodied living beings are Ekendriyas, one-sensed living beings, and so they have to acquire the first four faculties

None of the living beings die before they have fully developed at least the following three -

(1) Nutrition (2) body, and (3) a sense-organ or organs

According to this classification, Earth-bodied living beings are divided into the following four major types -

- (1) Earth-bodied living being, which is subtle but fully developed.
- (2) Earth-bodied living being which is subtle but not fully developed.
- (3) Earth-bodied living being, which is gross and fully developed
- (4) Earth-bodied living being, which is gross but not fully developed

वायरा जे उ पञ्जत्ता बुविहा ते विद्यादिया ।
 सण्हा खरा य बोद्धव्या सण्हा सत्ताविहा तहिं ॥ ४ ॥
 किण्हा नीला य रुहिण य हाळिहा छकिहा तहा ।
 पडुपणमद्विया खरा छत्तीसविहा ॥ ५ ॥

4-5 The gross and fully developed Earth-bodied living beings are said to be of two kinds (1) smooth, and (2) rough. The smooth ones are of seven kinds viz —

Black, blue, red, yellow, white, pale, dust, and fine dust

The rough ones are of thirty-six kinds, (they are enumerated below)

पुट्टवी य सकरा वालुया य उबले सिला य लीणूसे ।
 अय-तडय-तंब-सीसग-रुण-सुवण्णे य वडरे य ॥ ६ ॥
 हरियाले हिंगुलए मणीसिला सासगंजण-पवाले ।
 अठ्ठपडलऽठ्ठमालुय वायरकाए मणिविहाणे ॥ ७ ॥
 गोमेज्जए य रुयगे अंके फलिहे य लोहियक्खे य ।
 मरगय-मसारगळे भुयमोयग-इंदनीले य ॥ ८ ॥
 चंदण-गेरुय-इंसगव्हे पुलए सोगंधिए य बोद्धव्वे ।
 चंवप्पह-वेसलिए जलकंते सूरकंते य ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 36 73-76)

6-9 (Pure) earth, gravel, sand, (small) stones, (big slabs of stone) or rocks, sea-salt, copper, iron, tin, lead, silver, gold and diamond (Iron, only when it is in mines. Afterwards when the ore is taken out and turned into sheets etc by chemical or other processes, then it is lifeless) This applies to all the minerals (from अयम् to मनःशिला) Orpiment (हरियाळ), vermillion, realgar (मरगियाळ), Sāsaka — a mineral,

antimony (अञ्जन), coral, mica and sand mixed with mica these are varieties of gross Earth—bodies and to these are to be added the following fourteen kinds of precious stones —

- (1) Gomedaka—Hyacinth, (2) Rucaka—Natron
 (3) Añka, (4) Lohitakṣa or Crystal (5) Masaragalla,
 or Emerald, (6) Bhuja—mocaka, (7) Sapphire
 (8) Candana, Gaurika, or Hansagarbha, Red chalk
 (9) Pulaka, (10) Saugandhika—Sulphur (11) Candra-
 prabha (12) Lapis—lazuli, (13) Jalakānta, (14) Sūrya-
 kanta

The different treatises on precious stones have described in details all these precious stones. So long as they are imbedded in earth, they are said to be sentient, and are classified as earth—bodies. But the moment they are taken out, they are life-less and are included under the category of non-soul. Many of these precious stones have medicinal value also. All these thirty-six earth bodies can again be subdivided into numerous subdivisions on the basis of their colour, smell, taste, touch and size or shape.

इविहा आउजीवा उ सुहुमा बायरा तहा ।

पञ्जत्तमपञ्जत्ता पवमेण इहा पुणो ॥ १० ॥

बायरा जे उ पञ्जत्ता पंचहा ते पक्कित्तिया ।

सुद्धोवण य उस्से हस्तणू महिया हिमे ॥ ११ ॥

(उ 36 84 85)

10—11 The water-lives are of two kinds (1) subtle and (2) gross ones and both of them are

again of two types, (1) fully developed, and (2) undeveloped

The gross and fully developed are (again) said to be of five kinds —

(1) pure water or rain water, (2) dew, (3) exudations or drops on grass etc, (4) fog or mist, and (5) ice (or hail)

The subtle Water-bodies also pervade the whole world like subtle Earth-bodies But there is only one kind of subtle Water-body, and this subtle species is distributed all over the world

द्विविहा वणस्सईजीवा सुहुमा वायरा तहा ।

पज्जत्तमपज्जत्ता एवमेण इहा पुणो ॥ १२ ॥

वायरा जे उ पज्जत्ता इविहा ते वियाहिया ।

साहारणसरीरा य पत्तेगा य तहेव य ॥ १३ ॥

पत्तेगसरीरा उ जेगहा ते पकित्तिया ।

मक्खया गुच्छा य शुम्भा य लया वह्नी तणा तहा ॥ १४ ॥

यलया पव्वगा कुहणा जलसहा औसही तहा ।

रुक्खिकाया य वाद्वच्चा पत्तेगादे विहाइया ॥ १५ ॥

साहारणसरीरा उ जेगहा ते पकित्तिया ।

आहुण मूलण चंय सिंगवेरं तहेव य ॥ १६ ॥

(३० 36 92-96)

12-16 Plant-lives are of two kinds (1) subtle, and (2) gross ones, and both of them are again subdivided into two, viz. fully developed and undeveloped

The gross and fully developed Plant-lives are again said to be of two kinds (1) multiple souls

bodies are those that are capable of (voluntary) movement under stress and strain i e when alarmed or scared

Further subdivisions of these three will be described later on

इविहा तेजजीवा उ सुक्ष्मा वायरा तथा ।

पञ्जत्तमपञ्जत्ता पथमेण इहा पुणो ॥ १८ ॥

वायरा जे उ पञ्जत्ता जेगहा ते विद्यादिया ।

ईगाले सुम्पुरे अगणी अञ्जिजाला तहेव य ॥ १९ ॥

(उ० 36 108-109)

18-19 The Fire-lives are of two kinds subtle and gross ones they are further subdivided into two kinds viz. (1) those that are fully developed, and (2) those that are undeveloped The gross and fully developed ones are said to be of many kinds e.g. burning charcoal and chaff fire, flames of fire etc Other kinds are—meteors lightning and many other kinds besides

The subtle Fire-lives are but of one kind, and pervade the entire earth

इविहा वाडजीवा उ सुक्ष्मा वायरा तथा ।

पञ्जत्तमपञ्जत्ता पथमेण इहा पुणो ॥ २० ॥

वायरा जे उ पञ्जत्ता पचहा ते पकित्तिया ।

उकलिया मंडलिया वणगुंजा सुद्धवाया य ॥ २१ ॥

(उ 36 117 118)

20-21 The Wind-lives are of two kinds subtle and gross ones, they are further divided into two kinds viz.

(1) those that are fully developed, and (2) those that are undeveloped

The gross and fully developed ones are of five kinds (1) Utkalikā—intermittent winds, or squalls, (2) Mandalikā—whirlwinds (having a circular or spiral motion), (3) Ghanavāyu—thick winds, sea—winds These winds blow on the oceans and support the Vimānas (celestial regions) and the world, and have the density of snow, (4) high winds—making a din or humming sound, and (5) low winds or gentle breezes

ओराला तसा जे उ चउहा ते पकितिया ।

वेइंदिय-तेइंदिय-चउरी-पंचिंदिया चेव ॥ २२ ॥

(उ० 36 126)

22 Mobile beings with organic bodies—
(i c animals)—are of four kinds —

(1) those possessing two sense—organs,

(2 , those with three sense—organs,

(3) those with four sense—organs, and

(4) those with five sense—organs

वेइंदिया उ जे जीवा दुविहा ते पकितिया ।

पज्जत्तमपज्जत्ता तंसि भए सुजेह मे ॥ २३ ॥

किमिणां सोमंगला चेव अलसा माइवाहया ।

वात्सीमुहा य सिप्पीया संखा संखणगा तहा ॥ २४ ॥

पद्मेयाणुद्धया चं व तहेव य वरादगा ।

जलगा जालगा चं व चंदणा य तहेव य ॥ २५ ॥

bodies are those that are capable of (voluntary) movement under stress and strain i e when alarmed or scared

Further subdivisions of these three will be described later on

इविहा तेउजीवा उ सुद्धमा बायरा तहा ।

पञ्जत्तमपञ्जत्ता एवमेए इहा पुणो ॥ १८ ॥

बायरा जे उ पञ्जत्ता जोगहा ते वियाहिया ।

इंगले सुम्सुरे अगणी अञ्जिजाला तहेव य ॥ १९ ॥

(उ 36 108-109)

18-19 The Fire-lives are of two kinds subtle and gross ones they are further subdivided into two kinds viz (1) those that are fully developed, and (2) those that are undeveloped The gross and fully developed ones are said to be of many kinds e.g burning charcoal and chaff fire, flames of fire etc. Other kinds are—meteors, lightning and many other kinds besides.

The subtle Fire-lives are but of one kind, and pervade the entire earth

इविहा वाउजीवा उ सुद्धमा बायरा तहा ।

पञ्जत्तमपञ्जत्ता एवमेए इहा पुणो ॥ २० ॥

बायरा जे उ पञ्जत्ता पंचहा ते पकितिया ।

उकलिया मेडलिया चणगुजा सुद्धवाया य ॥ २१ ॥

(उ 36 117 118)

20-21 The Wind-lives are of two kinds subtle and gross ones they are further divided into two kinds viz

(1) those that are fully developed, and (2) those that are undeveloped

The gross and fully developed ones are of five kinds (1) Utkalikā—intermittent winds, or squalls, (2) Mandalikā—whirlwinds (having a circular or spiral motion), (3) Ghanavāyu—thick winds, sea—winds These winds blow on the oceans and support the Vimānas (celestial regions) and the world, and have the density of snow, (4) high winds—making a din or humming sound, and (5) low winds or gentle breezes

ओराला तस्रा जे उ चडहा ते पकितिया ।

वेईदिय-तेईदिय-चडरो-पंचिदिया चव ॥ २२ ॥

(उ० 36 126)

22 Mobile beings with organic bodies—
(i.e. animals)—are of four kinds—

(1) those possessing two sense-organs,

(2) those with three sense-organs,

(3) those with four sense-organs, and

(4) those with five sense-organs

वेईदिया उ जे जीवा दुविहा ते पकितिया ।

पञ्चसमपञ्चता तेमि भेण सुणेद मे ॥ २३ ॥

किमिणां मोंमंगला चव अलसा माइवाहया ।

वार्नामुता य विर्पीया संखा संखणगा तहा ॥ २४ ॥

पहंयाणुदया चव तोय य वराडगा ।

जन्मगा जालगा चव चंदणा य तंदय य ॥ २५ ॥

इह बेदेदिया एए जेगहा पवमायओ ।

छोगेगदेसे ते सव्वे न सव्वत्य चियादिया ॥ २६ ॥

(उ० 36-127-130)

23-26 Living beings with two sense organs are said to be of two kinds subtle and gross Both are (again of two kinds each) —(1) fully developed, and (2) undeveloped Hear from me their sub-divisions —

(1) Worms, (2) Somangala, (3) Alasa, (4) Matrvāhaka (कलवज्जरा) (5) Vāsimukha—whose mouth is like a chisel or adze many insects of this description, (6) Shells, (7) Conches, (8) Śankhanaka—very small conch-like animals, (9) Palloya, (10) Anullaya (11) Varādika-cowries, (12) Jalluya-(Jalaukasa) leeches, (13) Jalaka, (14) Candana - (they are animals living in water and on land.

These and many others like these, are the many kinds of beings with two sense organs All of them live only in a part of the world they do not live everywhere.

Exp Those that are ordinarily termed as worms and insects come under the categories of two three, or four-sensed living beings

तेहदिया उ जे जीवा इविहा ते पाकिस्सिया ।

पज्जत्तमपज्जत्ता तेसिं भेए सुणेह मे ॥ २७ ॥

छुंछुपियीलिया इत्ता उक्कलुदेदिया तहा ।

तणहारकद्वहारा य मात्तगा पत्तहारणा ॥ २८ ॥

कप्पासऽड्डिमिजा य तिंदुगा तउसमिजगा ।
 सदावरी य गुम्मी य बोद्धव्वा इंदगाइया ॥ २९ ॥
 इंदगावमाईया वेगहा एवमायओ ।
 लोमिगवेसे ते सव्वे न सव्वत्थ वियाहिया ॥ ३० ॥
 (३० 36 136-139)

27-30 Beings with three organs of sense are said to be of two kinds (1) subtle, and (2) gross ones Both are either fully developed or undeveloped Hear from me their sub-divisions

(1) Kunthu, (2) Ants, (3) Bugs, (4) Ukkala
 (5) Uddehiya—White ants (cp उद्देई Mar, उदाई H), (6) Tanahāra—Growing in grass, (7)
 Katthahāra—(काष्ठहार)—Breeding or growing in wood, (8) Māhig or māluḥa (माजीण ? Mar), (9)
 Patrahāraka—Growing on leaves, (10) Kārpāsa—
 Growing in cotton seeds, (11) Asthūmajjā—
 Growing in seeds and fibres, (12) Tinduka, (13)
 Trapusa, (14) Minjaka, (15) Śatāvārī, (16) Gulmī,
 (17) Indagāya or Indragopa.

These living beings with three sense-organs are of many kinds. They all live in a part of the world only, they do not live everywhere

उच्चरिंदिया उ जे जीवा इविहा ते पक्खित्थिया ।
 पज्जत्तमपज्जत्ता तेसिं भेष सुणेह मे ॥ ३१ ॥
 ओंभिया पोत्तिया चेव मच्छिइया मसगा तहा ।
 भमरे कीडपथंगे य हिंदुणे कुंकणे तहा ॥ ३२ ॥
 कुकुडे मिगिरीडी य नंदावत्ते य विंछिण ।
 टीले य भिगारी य विरली अच्छिवेइए ॥ ३३ ॥

अच्छिच्छे माहृष अछिच्छोदृष विचिन्ते चित्तपत्तय ।
 ओहिजलिया जलकारी य नीया तैतवयाइया ॥ ३४ ॥
 इय चउरिविया एष णेगहा पयमायओ ।
 छेगेगवेसे ते सव्वे न सव्वयत्थ विद्याहिया ॥ ३५ ॥

(३ 36 145 149)

31-35 Beings with four sense organs are said to be of two kinds subtle and gross ones. Both are either developed or undeveloped. Hear from me their sub-divisions or varieties —

(1) Andhaka, (2) Pottiya—Pautika, (3) Flies, (4) Mosquitoes, (5) Bees, (6) Insects and Moths, (7) Bugs, (8) Kunkana, (9) Kukkuda A small lizard ? (10) Nandyāvarta, (11) Scorpions, (12) Tola-Toad ? (13) Bhrīgaritaka—Crickets, (14) Virāḥi or Virāḥi (15) Akṣavedhaka, (16) Acchūla (17) Mahaya, (18) Acchirodaya (19) Vicitrapatraka - Butterflies having variegated wings, (20) Uhinjaliya (21) Jalakari (22) Tanniya ? (23) Tantaḡavāiya

These and similar others, are the beings with four organs of sense. They are all of them said to be living in one part of the world only (and not everywhere)

पचिविया उ जे जीया चउव्विहा ते विद्याहिया ।
 नेरइया तिरिक्खा य मशुया देवा य आहिया ॥ ३६ ॥
 (३ 36 155)

36 Beings with five organs of sense are said to be of four kinds —

(1) denizens of hell, (2) animals (lower animals
तिर्यक्—having an oblique motion), (3) human beings,
and (5) celestial beings

नेरदया सत्तविहा पुढवीसु सत्तसू भवे ।

रयणाभसकराभा वालुयाभा य आहिया ॥३७॥

पंकाभा य धूमाभा तमा तमतमा तहा ।

इह नेरदया एण सत्तहा परिकित्तिया ॥३८॥

(उ० 36.156-157)

37-38 Denizens of hell are of seven kinds, and they are said to belong to seven different hells. The seven hells are — (1) Ratnābhā – Ratnaprabhā, (2) Śarkarābhā – Śarkarāprabhā, (3) Vālukābhā–Vālukāprabhā, (4) Pankābhā–Pankaprabhā, (5) Dhūmābhā–Dhūmaprabhā, (6) Tamā – Tamahprabhā and (7) Tamatamā – Tamastamahprabhā

Exp The intensity of darkness increases from one hell to another, until in the seventh hell it reaches the maximum intensity of darkness

पंचिदियतिरिक्खा उ दुविहा ते वियाहिया ।

संमुच्छिद्यमतिरिक्खा उ गम्मवक्कंतिया तहा ॥३९॥

(उ० 36 170)

39 Lower animals, possessing five organs of sense are of two kinds (1) Sammūrchima—those which originate by 'generatio equivoca'—i. e. without being conceived in embryo etc, and (2) those which are born from the womb

— Exp The animals of the first kind do not possess

the sense of mind They grow or are born by assimilating the materials in their surroundings.

इविहा ते भवे तिविहा जलयरा थलयरा तथा ।

नहयरा य बोद्धव्या तैसि मेय सुणेह मे ॥४०॥

(३ 36 171)

40 Each of these is again known to be of three kinds — (1) Aquatic (2) terrestrial, and (3) aerial animals. Hear from me their subdivisions —

मणुया इविहमेया उ ते मे कित्तयओ सुण ।

संसुच्छिमा य मणुया गम्भयकंतिया तथा ॥४१॥

(३ 36 194)

41 Men (human beings) are of two kinds listen to me describing them —

(1) Men originating by generatio aequivoca and

(2) men born from the womb

Exp — Human beings are of different types according to the country of their origin colour castes races etc

देवा चउड्विहा पुत्ता ते मे कित्तयओ सुण ।

भोमिज्जवाणमंतरजोइसधेमाणिया तथा ॥४२॥

(३ 36 203)

42 Gods are said to be of four kinds. Hear me describing them —

(1) Bhaumeyakas

(2) Vānamantara or Vyantara

(3) Jyotiskas and

(4) Vaimānikas

[IV]

Karmavāda

The Doctrine of Karman

नो इन्द्रियगोचरं अमूर्तमावा अमूर्तमावा वि य होइ निच्यो ।

अज्ञात्वाहेतुं निययस्स बंधो संसारहेतुं च वर्यति बंधं ॥ १ ॥

(२० 14 19)

1 The soul cannot be apprehended by the senses, because it possesses no corporeal form, and since it possesses no corporeal form, it is eternal. The bonds or fetters of the soul have been said to be caused by bad qualities (such as मिथ्यात्व — wrong or misguided faith etc), and they are the cause of the worldly existence.

Exp A substance having one or more of the following qualities viz colour, taste, smell or touch, is a corporeal substance—(Mūrta) But as the soul possesses neither of these qualities, it is Amūrta —not corporeal, or formless, and hence it cannot be apprehended by the senses. An incorporeal substance is also a Nityadravya,—permanent or eternal substance, e g Ākāśa. But the fundamental reason why this eternal and incorporeal soul is bound by the fetters of karman is because of unrighteousness, non-cessation of activity, passions, etc. The soul is compelled to go through the cycle of worldly existence in order to suffer the fruits of its own actions. Thus the

bonds of karman are the root cause of this wordly existence

But it is not, as if, the soul were absolutely bereft of all kārmic bonds in the beginning, and that at some later stage it acquired these bonds. If we accept this position, then we shall be reduced to the untenable position that even the liberated souls also may at some later stage, be bound by karmic fetters.

But that is never possible. And so it is only reasonable to suppose that this kārmic bondage in regard to the soul is there right from the beginning. In other words this saṃsāra or wordly existence is regarded as Anādi – without a beginning but Santa – with an end. Gold, e. g. is impure so long as it is in the mines, but when it is taken out and purified by fire etc all the impurities are removed and it regains its natural purity. Even so by means of austerties, self control etc, the soul gets rid of all the kārmic bonds and regains its natural purity.

सद्यजीवाण कम्म तु सगहे छद्दिसागय ।

सत्त्वेसु वि पपसेसु सद्य सत्त्वेण वज्झग ॥ २ ॥

(३ 33 18)

2 All souls are susceptible to (assimilating) karman particles flowing from all the six quarters the karman binds the soul in all its parts, and the entire karman particles bind or cover the whole soul in every way.

Exp The six directions are the four cardinal points zenith and nadir. The commentators quote

scripture saying that one - sensed (Ekendriya) living beings are bound by karman in three and more directions According to the Dīpikā, the soul absorbs all material particles of a suitable nature (esp the karmapudgalas), with which it comes into contact, i e all those that are in the same space with the soul, and assimilates them in the form of Jñānāvaranīya (knowledge - obscuring) karman etc, just as fire consumes everything within its reach, but nothing beyond it

A particular variety or vargaṇā of matter (pudgala) which is capable of being transformed into karman, is technically known as kārmana vargaṇā or karma-pudgala

Karma-vargaṇās are physical molecules of a particular constitution which gives them the tendency to be attracted by Jīvas They are otherwise known as karma-prāyogya-pudgala The Jīvas and karma-vargaṇās co-exist, and by the mere fact of contiguity, Jīva and kārmic matter come to-gether, the latter contaminating the former This is explained by the analogy of ‘ अञ्जनवर्णपूर्णसमुद्रकन्धाय ’ i e a casket filled with collyrium powder becomes black by mere contact, (though its original colour is not black)

(This is a highly technical topic, and there are many treatises dealing with karman and how it affects the soul)

जमिणं जगर्हं पुढो जगा कम्मोहिं लुप्पन्ति पाणिणो ।
सयमेव कढेहिं गाहर्हं णो तस्स मुच्चेज्जऽपुट्ठयं ॥ ३ ॥

(सू० I 214)

3 For, in this world, all living beings suffer individually for their deeds. For the deeds they have done, they obtain (punishment or rebirth) none can escape the fruit of actions except by suffering for it.

Exp There are said to be eightyfour lakhs of yonis or species wherein a soul can be reborn. They are broadly divided into the following nine types —

(1) Sacitta Sentient — full of Jivapradeśas

(2) Acitta Non-sentient

(3) Sacittācitta Mixed

(4) Śīta Cold

(5) Usna Hot

(6) Śītosna Mixed

(7) Samvṛta Covered veiled, or concealed

(8) Vivṛta Uncovered open

(9) Samvṛta — vivṛta Mixed Partially open and partially closed

अस्मि च लाप अद्द वा परत्था

सयमसो वा तह अन्नहा वा ।

ससारमावस पर पर ते

बंधंति वेदंति य इभियाणि ॥ ४ ॥

(सू० I 74)

4 In this world or in the next, (the sinner suffers himself what he has inflicted on others) a hundred fold, or in some different form (of punishment)

Living beings in samsāra – cycle of worldly existence, go on ever acquiring fresh karman (by mind, speech or action), and suffer for their evil deeds

Exp This is the inexorable law of karman You reap as you sow Just as from a handful of seeds, one gets hundred or thousandfold yield (crop), even so one has to suffer hundredfold or more for one's evil deeds

सर्वे कपिया
अवियत्तेण दुहेण पाणिणो ।
हिण्डन्ति भयाउला सदा
जाइजरामणेहिऽमिदुया ॥ ५ ॥

(सू० I 2318)

5 All living beings are fashioned by (i e owe their present form of existence to), *their own* karman They are always suffering some latent misery (*अन्यथा*), and being always scared and terrified (by an unknown fear—but of which they are inwardly conscious), these timid and wicked beings wander (in this samsāra), being tortured by rebirth, old age, and death

Exp. Just as a criminal is always haunted by the fear of his evil deed, always afraid of being caught, similarly living beings also are always haunted by the fear of the unknown fate

कामेहि य संथवेहि गिद्धा कम्मसहा कालेण जंतवो ।
ताले जह वंधणच्छुप एवं आउखयम्मि तुट्ठई ॥ ६ ॥

(सू० I 216)

6 (Being) addicted to worldly pleasures and (the company of) relatives (and friends), (they never pause even for a moment to think of the future) but in course of time they have to suffer for their own actions. And when the (span of their) life is exhausted, they must fall down- (die)- like a coconut, detached from its stalk

Exp Man regards himself as a sort of permanent fixture in this world. In all the stress and strain of his worldly activities he rarely tries to find time to think about the future - i e beyond this life. But the icy hand of death strikes and strikes unseen, and then he has to pay and pay very heavily for all his misdeeds and as it is entirely a 'personal account' - (*प्रत्येक पुण्यपापम्*)- he has to suffer the consequences of his deeds all by himself. Nobody can share them either here or in the next world

तेणे जहा संचिमुहे गहीए

सकमुणा किखइ पावकारी ।

एय पया पेख इहं च लोए

कबाण कम्माण न मोक्खहु अत्थि ॥ ७ ॥

(३ ४३)

7 As a burglar caught in the breach of a wall, perishes by the act he himself had performed (viz giving a breach in the wall), even so people, in this life and after death - (in the next life), can never escape (the fruit of) actions performed (by them)

Exp Here again the inexorable law of karman

is stressed. There is no escape from the fruit of actions, and one has got to suffer the consequences either here & during this life, or in the next

The commentator Devendra relates two stories of burglars. They are as follows —

(1) A burglar is caught in the breach of a wall he himself had caused, by the owner of the house, who caught hold of the feet of the burglar as he was trying to enter the house (feet first). The burglar's accomplice, who was standing outside, started to pull him out of the breach by catching hold of his head. But in this tug-of-war, the burglar lost his life, being buried under the debris of the wall which collapsed

(2) A burglar entered a house by giving a small and probably an artistic breach in the wall. Next day, people gathered in front of the house, and started wondering how the thief could have managed to get access inside the house through such a small hole. The burglar also, apparently, could not resist the temptation of visiting the scene of his crime, and on hearing the remarks of the people assembled there, he started casting furtive glances at the breach in the wall and his own body. The vigilant police officers that were keeping a watch there, immediately captured him, and thus he was caught by his own action.

But it is more likely that the text refers to the first story, particularly because of the words 'अभिगृहीत' — caught in the breach of the wall

13 Just as when the seeds have dried up and withered (burnt), no fresh sprouts can spring forth from them, similarly once the seeds - (roots) - of actions have been burnt down (destroyed), then no further blossoms - in the form of rebirths - will grow from them

अहं मिउलेयालितं गह्वरं तुवं अहो वयस्य एव ।

आसवकयकम्मणुरु जीवा वञ्चति अहराद्वं ॥ १४ ॥

सं श्वेदं तच्चिसुखं जलोपरिं द्वाद जायलहुमाव ।

अहं तह कम्मयिसुक्का लोयगपरविया होंति ॥ १५ ॥

(नया VI टीका)

14-15 Just as a (dried) gourd fruit when it is covered with layers of soft earth (clay) becomes heavy and sinks down (in water) even so the soul becomes heavy because of the influx of karmans and sinks to (i. e. is born in) the lower types of births (the four - fold existence in samsara) But the same (gourd fruit) when it is freed from the thick layers of clay, - (with the clay gradually being dissolved in water) - becomes light (attains its natural lightness), and floats on the surface of water in like manner, the souls devoid of all the karmans, (attain their natural state) and go to the top of the world and reside there permanently

Exp Here also we get a very fine illustration from everyday life A dried gourd fruit naturally floats on water But if it is covered with thick layers of clay, then it becomes heavy and sinks to the

bottom. In course of time, however, the clay is bound to dissolve, and gradually the gourd starts to come up, until at last when the entire coating of clay has been dissolved the gourd floats on the surface of water. Similarly the soul, because of the influx of karman - particles, assimilates the eight-fold karmans, and thereby sinks down to the lower types of existence in the samsāra viz hellish being, lower animal, human being, or a god. But when all the karmans are annihilated by severe austerities and perfect self-control, the soul also rises upwards and goes to the top of the world - (Lokāgṛa), or Siddha-silā, - the abode of siddhas, and never again returns to this samsāra.

अहं कर्माहं वोच्छामि आणुपुर्व्वं जहक्कमं ।

जेहिं बद्धो अयं जीवो संसारे परिवट्ठई ॥ १६ ॥

नाणस्सावरणिज्जं देसणावरणं तथा ।

वेयणिज्जं तथा मोहं आउकम्मं तहेव य ॥ १७ ॥

नामकम्मं च गोयं च अंतरायं तहेव य ।

एवमेवाहं कर्माहं अट्ठेव उ ओ ॥ १८ ॥

(उक्तं 33.1 to 3)

16, 17 and 18 I shall now explain the eight types of karman, in their due order and serially, being bound by these karmans, the soul has to revolve (go round and round) in this cycle of worldly existence. The eight karmans are —

(1) Jñānāvaraniya knowledge-obscuring karman. This karman prevents the soul from acquiring

13 Just as when the seeds have dried up and withered (burnt) no fresh sprouts can spring forth from them, similarly once the seeds - (roots) - of actions have been burnt down (destroyed) then no further blossoms - in the form of rebirths - will grow from them

अहं मित्रलेवालितं गच्छति हृत् अहो ययइ एव ।

आसवकयकम्मयुरु जीवा ययति अहरगदं ॥ १४ ॥

तं चेव तव्विमुक्कं जलीवरिं ठाइ जायलहुभावं ।

अहं तहं कम्मविमुक्का लोयगपइठिया हाति ॥ १५ ॥

(नया VI टीका)

14-15 Just as a (dried) gourd fruit when it is covered with layers of soft earth (clay) becomes heavy and sinks down (in water) even so the soul becomes heavy because of the influx of karmans and sinks to (i e is born in) the lower types of births (the four - fold existence in samsara) But the same (gourd fruit) when it is freed from the thick layers of clay, - (with the clay gradually being dissolved in water) - becomes light (attains its natural lightness), and floats on the surface of water in like manner, the souls devoid of all the karmans, (attain their natural state) and go to the top of the world and reside there permanently

Exp Here also we get a very fine illustration from everyday life. A dried gourd fruit naturally floats on water But if it is covered with thick layers of clay, then it becomes heavy and sinks to the

bottom In course of time, however, the clay is bound to dissolve, and gradually the gourd starts to come up, until at last when the entire coating of clay has been dissolved the gourd floats on the surface of water Similarly the soul, because of the influx of karman - particles, assimilates the eight - fold karmans, and thereby sinks down to the lower types of existence in the samsāra viz hellish being, lower animal, human being, or a god But when all the karmans are annihilated by severe austerities and perfect self - control, the soul also rises upwards and goes to the top of the world - (Lokāgra), or Siddha-śilā, - the abode of siddhas, and never again returns to this samsāra

अहं कर्माहं वोच्छ्रामि आणुपुर्व्वं जहक्कमं ।

जेहिं ब्रह्मो अयं जीवो संसारे परिवर्तई ॥ १६ ॥

नाणस्सावरणिज्जं देसणावरणं तहा ।

वेयणिज्जं तहा मोहिं आउकम्मं तहेव य ॥ १७ ॥

नामकम्मं च मोयं च अंतरायं तहेव य ।

एवमेवाहं कर्माहं अहेव उ ओ ॥ १८ ॥

(उत० 33.1 to 3)

16, 17 and 18 I shall now explain the eight types of karman, in their due order and serially, being bound by these karmans, the soul has to revolve (go round and round) in this cycle of worldly existence The eight karmans are —

(1) Jñānāvarāṇīya knowledge-obscuring karman
This karman prevents the soul from acquiring

(correct) knowledge for instance we can normally see with our eyes, but if our eyes are covered by a strip of cloth, then though we have the eye-sight, still we are like a blind man

(2) *Darsanāvaranīya* This karman obscures the vision of the soul Just as, when we wish to go and see a king or any eminent person, the usher, or the secretary, or the guard posted at the door, does not allow us to enter, and thus prevents us from seeing the person concerned Similarly, this particular karman prevents the soul from having a true perception (correct perspective) of the things in this world

(3) *Vedanīya* This is further subdivided into two sub-divisions—(1) *Sātāvedanīya* and (11) *Asītāvedanīya* i e (1) Pleasure and (2) Pain-experiencing karman. The soul, by nature, is free from these *Dvandvas*, viz pleasure or pain, but because of the influence of karman it undergoes these feelings. Just as a man who tries to lick the blade of a sword which is smeared with honey, would have a pleasant sensation while tasting honey but when the tongue is cut by the sharp blade he experiences pain Pleasure and pain are always tied up together, and when we have the one the other is just round the corner

(4) *Mohanīya* This karman infatuates and deludes the soul thus preventing right faith and right conduct It is like an intoxicant; just as a person who is under the influence of strong alcohol, does not know what he is doing, similarly, under the influence

of Mohanīya karman, the soul also is unable to distinguish between right and wrong.

(This is like conscious error and unconscious error. The effects of unconscious wrong doing are boundless, as the wrong-doer himself also is not aware or conscious of the harm he will do)

(5) Āyuskarman This karman determines the span of life of a living being (soul) in a particular birth. This is comparable to the sentence of imprisonment, just as a prisoner is forced to stay in a prison according to the sentence awarded by the judge, the soul also is allotted a span of life according to its Āyuskarman.

(6) Nāma-karman Name-giving karman This determines the body, colour, name, fame etc of a living being. Just as a painter paints a painting with the aid of different colours, and gives it a name, even so the Nāmakarman is responsible for the various aspects of a living being.

(7) Gotra - karman This karman determines, and is responsible for the status, high or low, of a living being in the saṃsāra. It is like a potter, who fashions and moulds different types of earthenware, some of low quality and others of a high quality.

(8) Antarāya karman Karman that puts in obstacles in the way of the soul in attaining higher powers (labdhis). The analogy given in regard to this is that of a treasurer of a king. Even though the king

may issue an order that you should be given a lakh of rupees you do not get it unless the treasurer hands it over to you. And many a time he tries to put in all sorts of obstacles in the way of your getting it e.g. he would say the treasury is closed to-day the keys are misplaced and so on. This karman prevents the soul from attaining the special labdhis or high attainments, such as charity gain (legitimate one), enjoyment of pleasures and power to exert or energy e.g. sometimes you may want to do a thing but you do not feel like doing it. The soul is willing – but the flesh is weak.

This karma – destruction takes place either consciously (Sakama-nirjarā) or unconsciously (Akama-nirjara). Even if we do good unknowingly, we get the fruit of it just the same.

Though all souls have initially a uniform nature, the diversity that we see in the world is because of their individual karman.

Rare Acquisition . Or Four Requisites

चत्वारि परमंगाणि दुल्लहाणीह जन्तुणो ।

माणुसत्तं सुई सद्धा संजमम्मि य वीरियं ॥ १ ॥

(३० ३ १)

1 Four things of paramount value are difficult to obtain here (in this world), by a living being (1) human birth, (2) religious instruction, (3) faith in the (true) religion, and (4) energy to practise self-control

Exp. These four are regarded as very rare and precious possessions, and so naturally are not easy to obtain by living beings. It is of course universally acknowledged that human birth is a very precious and most valuable thing. Man is called 'the crown of creation', but he forgets that he is born a human being as a result of a very great strenuous effort on his part, and he should not waste the precious opportunity, but rather make the most of it. And that is why he is exhorted here to acquire the other three precious possessions if he wants to get the best out of his life in this world.

माणुस्सं विग्गहं लद्धुं सुई धम्मस्स दुल्लहा ।

जं सोच्चा पड्विज्जन्ति तथं खन्तिमहिंसयं ॥ २ ॥

(३० ३ २)

2 And though they- (the living beings)-be born with a human body it will be difficult for them to hear (the true) religious instruction, on hearing which, they will undertake austerities forgiveness, and abstinence from injury to (all other) living beings (Ahimsā)

आहूय सयण लक्षु सद्धा परमवृद्धहा ।

सौद्धा जेआवयं मग बहये परिमस्सई ॥ ३ ॥

(३ 39)

3 And though, per chance they may (get an opportunity to) hear the (true) religious instruction, it will still be very difficult for them to believe in it (implicitly i. e. faith in the true doctrine is still more difficult) For there are many (in this world) who, even after hearing (or being shown) the right path stray from it

Exp There are so many religious preceptors who are proclaiming and shouting that they alone have realised the truth and theirs is the only way to attain mokṣa. Naturally one gets confused in all this din and being pulled and swayed in all directions it is very difficult to make the correct choice. Supposing, per chance, one does make the choice, implicit belief and faith is still more difficult. Man is like a doubting Thomas and is ever likely to swerve from the right path

सुद्ध च लक्षु सद्ध च थीरिय पुण इद्धहा ।

बहये रोयमाणा दि जो य जं पबिबज्जई ॥ ४ ॥

(३ 3-10)

4 Then after hearing the true religious instruction, and even after pinning their faith in it, the strenuous effort (required to translate it into practice) is still (more) difficult For, there are many who, though they approve of it, are still unable to practise the religion

Exp Mere listening to and approving of the true religion is not enough One must also practise what one believes Just as all the theoretical knowledge of swimming will not enable a man to float on water unless he has actually put it into practice, even so, mere belief in religious tenets and principles is not enough, unless one puts them into practice

माणुसत्तम्मि आयाओ जो धम्मं सोच्च सद्वहे ।
तवस्ती वीरियं लद्धं संबुद्धे निव्वुणे रयं ॥ ५ ॥

(२० 3 11)

5 He, who after having been born as a human being, listens to, and also (firmly) believes in the true religion, and (further) strenuously practises it as a monk, alone guards himself against the influx of karmans, and also shakes off (gets rid of) all the sinful karmans-particles, (or dust, accumulated over years, and in the past births)

सोही उज्जुयभयस्त धम्मो सुद्वस्त विद्वई ।
नित्याण परमं जाड धयसित्तिव पावण ॥ ६ ॥

(२० 3 12)

6 One, who is straightforward (alone) obtains purity, one who is pure, will (alone) be steadfast in

religion he-(such a soul alone)-reaches the highest Nirvana (mokṣa), resembling (in lustre) the fire fed (lit sprinkled over) with ghee

मोक्षा माणुस्तप मोष अप्पडिरूव अहाउय ।
पुद्वि विसुद्धसद्धम्मे केवल बोहि बुज्झिया ॥ ७ ॥

(३ 319)

7 After having enjoyed the unrivalled human pleasures throughout the life and at the proper time such a soul obtains absolute knowledge (later on), on the strength of his pure religious merit acquired before (in former life or lives)

चउरंगं दुल्लहं नघा सजमं षड्विजिया ।
तवसा धुयकम्मस सिद्धे हवइ सासप ॥ ८ ॥

(४ 320)

8 Realising that the (above mentioned) four requisites are very difficult to obtain, he-(a living being)-should undertake-(exert in)-self-control and after having shaken off (destroyed) all the remnants of his (past) karman he will become an eternal perfect or liberated soul

[VI]

Self-conquest Or Self-control

सरीरमाहु नाव त्ति जीवो बुच्च नानिओ ।

संसारो अण्णवो वुत्तो जं तरन्ति महेत्तिणो ॥ १ ॥

(उ० 23 73)

1 The body is said to be the boat and the soul is said to be the sailor The samsāra (worldly existence) is said to be the ocean which is crossed (only) by great sages

अप्पा खलु सयं रक्खियवो सव्विन्दिणहिं सुसमाहिणहिं ।

अरक्खिओ जाइपहिं उचेइ सुरक्खिओ सव्वइहाण मुच्चइ ॥ २ ॥

(दहा० च० 2 16)

2 One must always guard oneself - (one's soul) - (from all evil), by having all the sense-organs properly controlled In case the soul is not well-guarded, it takes to the path leading to birth (and death), while if well-controlled, it becomes free from all (worldly) sorrows and misery

जस्सेवमप्पा उ हवेज्ज निच्छिओ चइज्ज वेहे न हू धम्मसासणं ।

सं तारिस्सं नो पयलेन्ति इन्द्रिया उवेतवाया व सुदंसणं गिरिं ॥ ३ ॥

(त्तम० च० 1 17)

3 One, whose soul is thus firmly established in religion, would fain abandon (sacrifice) his body, but never the religious precepts (or instructions) Such an (illustrious) one is never swayed away by

the senses just as the severest of stormy gales can never shake the mount Meru

Exp It is only the weak minded that yield to their senses. The strong ones keep them under control. A furious gale or storm will uproot even the strongest of trees, but the mount Meru, will never be affected or budged even an inch

अप्या चेव वमेयव्यो अप्या हु खलु इदमो ।

अप्या वन्तो सुही होद अस्सि लोप परत्थ य ॥ ४ ॥

(३ 115)

4 The Self alone should be subdued for it is very difficult to subdue it. he who has subdued his Self becomes happy in this world as well as in the next

Exp Self-conquest is the real conquest and not the conquest of others, it is the key to the real happiness in this world as well as the next. By Ātman here, is to be understood the inner or inherent tendencies of a living being

वर मे अप्या वन्तो संजमेण तवेण य ।

माहं परेहि वम्मन्तो वधणेहि वहहि य ॥ ५ ॥

(३ 116)

5 It is far better that I (myself) should subdue my Self by self-control and austerities, rather than be subdued by others with fetters and corporeal punishment

अप्या नई वेयरणी अप्या मे कूडसामली ।

अप्या कामइहा धेणू अप्या म न दणं वणं ॥ ६ ॥

(३ ८0 36)

6 My own Self is the river Vaitaranī, my own Self is the Kūṭasālmālī tree, my own Self is the (miraculous) desire-yielding cow (kāmadhenu), and my own Self is the park Nandana (paradise)

Exp. Vaitaranī is a river in hell, whose waters are saline and very bitingly cold like the blade of a razor. The Kūṭasālmālī is also a tree in hell, whose leaves are also very sharp and piercing.

The idea is that one's own Self is responsible for the tortures in hell or pleasures in heaven.

अप्या कृता विकृता य दुःखाण य सुहाण य ।

अप्या मित्तममित्तं च दुष्पट्वियसुपट्विओ ॥ ७ ॥

(उ० 20 37)

7 My own Self is the doer and un-doer of misery and happiness (in this world), my own Self is my (best) friend or (worst) foe, depending on whether it acts well or badly.

जो सहस्सं सहस्साणं संगमि जुज्झय जिण ।

एणं जिणेज्ज अप्पाणं एस्स से परमो जओ ॥ ८ ॥

अप्पाणमेव जुज्झाहि किं ते जुज्झेण वज्झओ ।

अप्पाणमेवमप्पाणं जइत्ता सुहमेहए ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 9 34-35)

8 A man may conquer thousands and thousands of invincible foes (but that is of no real consequence), his greatest victory is when he conquers only his own Self.

[VII]

Moksa-Mārga

The Road To Liberation (The Path Of Liberation)

नाण च दैसण चव चरित्त च तया तद्वा ।

एयमग्गमणुप्पत्ता जीवा गच्छन्ति साम्मह १ ॥

(= 283)

1 (Right) knowledge (right) faith, (right) conduct, and austerities Those who follow this (four-fold) path will attain the best state of existence (final beatitude)

Exp One who has renounced the world aspires after final liberation or mokṣa But the problem is, which is the right path leading to mokṣa ? There are so many roads and cross-roads, and naturally one gets perplexed The choice of the right path is very important if he wants to reach his destination Here is described the right path to liberation and that consists of (right) knowledge, faith conduct and austerities One who keeps to this path scrupulously, will certainly reach the destination, viz mokṣa

Right knowledge right faith, and right conduct—these are called the Ratnatraya—The Three Jewels.

नाणेण ज्ञाणं भावे दैसणेण य सद्वहे ।

चरित्तेण निगिण्हाम तवेण परिसुज्झाम ॥ २ ॥

(= 2835)

2 By (right) knowledge one knows (the true nature of) things, by (right) faith one believes in them, by (right) conduct one controls (the influx of) karman, and by austerities one attains purity

तत्त पंचविहं नार्णं सुयं आसिणिद्रोहियं ।

ओहिनाणं तु तदयं मणनार्णं च केवलं ॥ ३ ॥

(३० 28 4)

3 Knowledge is fivefold —

(1) Ābhinibodhika (also called Matī) —knowledge obtained by the soul with the help of the five senses and the mind

(2) Śruta —knowledge derived from scriptures, or from hearing lectures, preaching etc

These two are termed Parokṣa — i.e. indirect, or mediate, because the soul gets this knowledge not directly, but through some other medium. The remaining three are Pratyakṣa or direct

(3) Avadhī —Supernatural or extra sensory perception. The soul gets this knowledge without the aid of the senses and the mind, but there is a limit (avadhī) to the extent of this knowledge, depending on the spiritual progress of the individual soul. This knowledge is natural or inborn in the case of celestial and hellish beings (Bhavapratyayika), while in the case of other living beings, it is Kṣāyopasaṃhāra — i.e. arising as a result of partial destruction and suppression of karman. But this knowledge, by its very nature, is limited (avadhī)

(4) Manahpariyā — Thought or mind — reading
ratiocination This is higher than Avadhī

(5) Kevala — Absolute knowledge There is
a *thing* that a kevalin does not know He knows
everything — past present and the future This is
the highest type of knowledge and the soul, after
attaining this becomes Siddha — a liberated or a
perfected soul

नानुसंगिस्स नाण नाणेण विणा न भुंति चरणगुणा ।

अनुसंगिस्स नत्थि मोक्खो नत्थि अमोक्खस्स निव्वान ॥ ४ ॥

(३ 28 30)

4 Without (right) faith there cannot be (right)
knowledge without (right) knowledge there can be
no (right or) virtuous conduct without virtuous
conduct there cannot be release or freedom from
karman (release from bondage) and without release
from karmic bondage, there cannot be Nirvana (libe-
ration or perfection)

Exp Right faith right knowledge and right con-
duct—these are the three essential pre-requisites of
moksa And these three are regarded as the Ratna-
trayī— The Three Jewels for an aspirant after
moksa

Without right faith (सम्यग् श्रद्धा) right knowledge
(सम्यग् ज्ञान) is not possible and unless one has the first
two right conduct (सम्यक् चरित्र) is not possible These
must be acquired in the order they are given Then
only the progress will be on the proper lines

तवी य दुविहो बुत्तो बाहिरव्वमन्तरो तहा ।

बाहिरो छव्विहो बुत्तो एमेवव्वमन्तरो तवी ॥ ५ ॥

(उ० 26 34)

5 Austeries (penance) is two-fold: (1) External and (2) Internal Both external and internal are sixfold each

Exp That which 'beats' the mind and the humours (वासु) in the body, is called tapas This is the best means for karma-destruction The 'External' is calculated to bring about the purity of the body, while the 'Internal' aims at the purity of the mind

अणसणमूणोघरिया भिक्खुघरिया य रसपरिच्चाओ ।

कायकिल्लेसो संलीणया य वज्झो तवी होरि ॥ ६ ॥

(उ० 30 8)

6 The External austeries are (1) Anasana fasting, (2) Ūnodankā (or Avamodarikā) eating less than one needs, (or gradual reduction of food), (3) Bhikkā-caryā collecting alms, (4) Rasaparityāga abstention from dainty food or delicacies, (5) Kāyakkleśa mortification of the flesh, (6) Samānātā withdrawing oneself within, by being very careful with the body and limbs, (i.e. he must be very careful in all his movements)

पायच्छित्तं विमभो येयावच्चे तह्य सवज्जाओ ।

झाणं च विउत्तगो एखो अम्मितरो तवी ॥ ७ ॥

7 Internal austerities are (1) Prayaścitta expiation of sins, (2) Vinaya politeness or humility (3) Vairavṛtya serving the Guru (preceptor) and elders (4) Swadhyaya study (of the scriptures) (5) Dhyana meditation (of the auspicious type) and (6) Vyutsarga (or Vyavasarga) abandoning all bodily care total disregard of the body

खवित्ता पुव्वकम्माइ संजमेण तवेण य ।

सव्वदुक्खप्पहीणह्ता पक्कमति महेसिणो ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० 28 36)

8 Having destroyed their past karman by means of self-control and austerities, the sages proceed towards (the goal : i.e. mokṣa), which is free from all sorrows and misery

तस्सस भग्गो गुरुधिद्वसेवा विवज्जणा बालज्जणस्स दूरा ।

सज्झायणतनिसेवणा य सुत्तत्थसव्वित्तणया धिरे य ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 3' 3)

9 This is the path leading to it (i.e. mokṣa) serving the preceptors and elders (senior monks) to avoid always the (company of) foolish and ignorant people to apply oneself to one's studies to resort to solitude to ponder and meditate on the meaning of scriptures and fortitude

Exp A traveller on the road to mokṣa must also possess the following qualities, if he is to make rapid progress —

(1) Humility serving the preceptors and elderly

saints is of great importance, and helps him in the acquisition of knowledge of the scriptures etc

(ii) Avoiding the company of the foolish Sat-sanga, or the company of the good, serves as a fillip to a newly initiated monk. On the other hand, the company of the foolish will retard his progress

(iii) Swādhyāya Study of scriptures or his daily lessons

(iv) Solitude This also is very difficult in the case of a novice, and so he should particularly cultivate this

(v) Meditating and pondering on the meaning and significance of the scriptures. He must utilise properly every minute of his time, and should not allow his mind to remain vacant or idle. An idle mind is devil's workshop

(vi) Fortitude courage to bear any hardships, and a balanced mind

[VIII]

Sādhana-krama

Steps To Self realisation

સોચા જાણદ કહ્યણ સોચા જાણદ પાયગ ।

ઉમર્ય પિ જાણદ સોચા જ હેચ ત સમાચરે ॥ ૧ ॥

(શ્લોક 4 11)

1 One learns what is beneficial and what is sinful (only) after hearing (the words of the preceptor) both these one learns only after listening (to the preceptor) one should practise only that which is beneficial

Exp There are certain things a monk must practise, and there are others he must avoid the Do's and Don'ts (vidhi and nisedha) He can be conversant with both of them only after listening very carefully to the instructions he receives from his preceptor

જો જીયે વિ ન યાણદ અજીવ વિ ન યાણદ ।

જીવાજીયે અચાળતો કહ સો નાહીદ સંજમ ॥ ૨ ॥

(શ્લોક 4 12)

2. One who does not know what constitutes life (living creatures) cannot also know what constitutes non life thus being ignorant of life and non-life how can he ever (hope to) know self-control ?

Exp Even in our ordinary day to-day existence, we are supposed to be law-abiding citizens. Ignor

ance of law is no excuse. A sādhaṅka must know thoroughly what is life and what is non-life. Otherwise how can he practise Ahimsā? This fundamental knowledge of the two categories – Jīva (life) and Ajīva (non-life) – is very essential, if he is to make any progress in his spiritual journey.

जो जीवे वि वियाणाइ अजीवे वि वियाणइ ।

जावाजीवे वियाणंतो सां हु नाही संजमं ॥ ३ ॥

(दश० ४ १३)

3 One who knows life (living beings), is also (thoroughly) conversant with non-life, one who knows both of them (thoroughly), will alone grasp self-control

जया जावमजीवे य दो वि एए वियाणइ ।

तया गइ बहुविहं सबजीवाण जाणइ ॥ ४ ॥

(दश० ४ १४)

4 When he becomes (thoroughly) conversant both with life and non-life, then alone he will be able to know the states of existence of all the living beings

Exp 'Gati' means a state of existence after death. There are four 'Gatis' possible in the case of every living being viz (i) Hellish being (नैयिक), (ii) Lower animal (निर्धृ), (iii) Human being (मनुष्य), (iv) Celestial being (देव). Every living being will have to be reborn in one or the other of these four types of existence, depending upon his karman (of course, this does not apply to those living beings who have annihilated their karman. They attain perfec-

tion and then they are free from the cycle of births and deaths)

अथा गदं बहुविह सत्यजीवान् जाणद ।

तथा पुण्यं च पापं च बंध मोक्षं च जाणद ॥ ५ ॥

(सूत्र ४ 15)

5 When he knows the four fold (lit manifold) stages of existence of all the living beings, then only he understands (the nature of) punya (merit), pāpa (sin) bandha (bondage of karman) and moksa (release from bondage)

Exp When a sādḥaka thoroughly understands the fourfold states of existence of living beings, then only he would be able to understand the nature of merit and demerit bondage of karman, and the ways and means of release from that bondage. He will then know that the four fold Gatis depend entirely upon the actions—good or bad—of the living beings, and that bondage or release is also entirely of their own making.

अथा पुण्यं च पापं च बंध मोक्षं च जाणद ।

तथा निर्विषय भाव ज दिव्ये जे व माणुसे ॥ ६ ॥

(सूत्र ४ 16)

6 When he knows (the principles of) merit, sin, bondage and release from bondage, then he is disgusted with—(discards as insipid)—all the pleasures, divine as well as human

Exp When he has thoroughly grasped all these principles, then he realises that all the pleasures,

whether worldly or divine, are absolutely insipid, transient, and not worth the trouble

जया निर्विदण भोए जे दिव्वे जे य माणुसे ।

तया चयइ संजोगं सविभतरवाहिरं ॥ ७ ॥

(दश० 41)

7 When he is disgusted with (all) the pleasures (of the senses), whether human or divine, then he renounces the attachment or contacts with objects external as well as internal

Exp By internal contacts is meant the four passions—(love, hatred, pride, etc), and by external contacts is meant worldly possessions, family ties etc When he realises that all pleasures are insipid and ultimately leave a bad taste, then he is no longer a prey to worldly passions, and then there is also no longer any attachment left in him for worldly possessions or ties

जया चयइ संजोगं सविभतरवाहिरं ।

तया मुण्डे भवित्तानं पद्वयइ अणगरियं ॥ ८ ॥

(दश० 418)

8 When he discards all ties and contacts, both internal as well as external, then he renounces the world, and becomes a homeless monk, with his head clean-shaven

Exp Anagāra means 'one who has no home, or a particular place of residence' A Jain monk must also remove the hair on his head (Keshaloca) at the

time of initiation into monkhood (Dikṣā) One, who has shaved his head is supposed to have discarded all care for the body and personal toilet.

जया मुण्डे भविताण पद्ययइ अणगारिय ।
तया संवरमुक्किह धम्म फासे अणुत्तरं ॥ ९ ॥

(दश 419)

9 When he has become a homeless (Jain) monk, after having shaved his head then he is able to practise the excellent religion of self-control

जया संवरमुक्किह धम्म फासे अणुत्तरं ।
तया धुणइ कम्मरय अबोहिकलुसकइ ॥ १० ॥

(दश 420)

10 When he practises the best religion of self control, then he shakes off the karmic dust created by non-enlightenment and evil thoughts

Exp Abodhi ~ The state of non-awakening of the soul, when the soul is wrapped in ignorance or false faith as opposed to samyaktva or righteousness

जया धुणइ कम्मरय अबोहिकलुसकइ ।
तया सध्वत्तर्ग नाण दंसर्ग चाभिगच्छइ ॥ ११ ॥

(दश 421)

11 When he has shaken off the karmic dust created by false faith and evil thoughts (passions) he attains all pervading knowledge and faith

जया सध्वत्तर्ग नाणं दंसर्ग चाभिगच्छइ ।
तया लोमलोगे च जिणो जाणइ केवली ॥ १२ ॥

(दश 422)

12 When he attains omniscience and all pervading faith, then he becomes a Jina - (kevalin), and knows the entire world (Loka), as well as the non-world (Aloka)

जया लोगमलोकं च जिणो जाणइ केवली ।

तया जोगे निरुभित्ता सेलेसि पडिवज्जइ ॥ १३ ॥

(दश० ४२)

13 When he becomes an omniscient Jina, and knows all the world and the non-world, then he curbs (controls) all the activities (internal as well as external), and attains the state of Śailesī, i.e. as firm and unmoved as a mountain

जया जोगे निरुभित्ता सेलेसि पडिवज्जइ ।

तया कम्मं खवित्ताणं सिद्धिं गच्छइ नीरओ ॥ १४ ॥

(दश० ४२४)

14 After completely controlling all the activities and after attaining the state of Śailesī, he annihilates all karman, and then being completely free from all karmic dust, he attains siddhi - perfection or liberation

जया कम्मं खवित्ताणं सिद्धिं गच्छइ नीरओ ।

तया लोगमत्थयत्थो सिद्धो हवइ सासओ ॥ १५ ॥

(दश० ४२५)

15 After annihilating all karman, having attained perfection, and being free from all karmic dust, he goes to the top of the world, and becomes an eternal, perfect, or liberated soul

time of initiation into monkhood (Dikṣā) One, who has shaved his head, is supposed to have discarded all care for the body and personal toilet.

अया मुण्डे भविताण पव्वयइ अणमारिय ।

तया संवरमुक्किह्वं धम्म फासे अणुत्तर ॥ ९ ॥

(दश 4 19)

9 When he has become a homeless (Jain) monk, after having shaved his head then he is able to practise the excellent religion of self-control

अया संवरमुक्किह्वं धम्म फासे अणुत्तरं ।

तया धुणइ कम्मरय अबोहिकलुसकड ॥ १० ॥

(दश 4 20)

10 When he practises the best religion of self-control, then he shakes off the karmic dust, created by non-enlightenment and evil thoughts

Exp Abodhī – The state of non-awakening of the soul, when the soul is wrapped in ignorance or false faith, as opposed to samyaktva or righteousness

अया धुणइ कम्मरये अबोहिकलुसकडं ।

तया सव्वत्तग नाण वसणं चाभिगच्छइ ॥ ११ ॥

(दश 4 21)

11 When he has shaken off the karmic dust created by false faith and evil thoughts (passions) he attains all pervading knowledge and faith

अया सव्वत्तग नाण वसणं चाभिगच्छइ ।

तया लोममलोमं च जिणो जाणइ केवली ॥ १२ ॥

(दश 4 22)

12 When he attains omniscience and all pervading faith, then he becomes a Jina - (kevalin), and knows the entire world (Loka), as well as the non-world (Aloka)

જયા લોગમલોગં ચ જિણો જાણદ્ કેવલી ।

તયા જોમે નિરંમિત્તા સેલેસિં પઢિવજ્જદ ॥ ૧૩ ॥

(દશ ૦ 42)

13 When he becomes an omniscient Jina, and knows all the world and the non-world, then he curbs (controls) all the activities (internal as well as external), and attains the state of Śaileśi, i e as firm and unmoved as a mountain

જયા જોમે નિરંમિત્તા સેલેસિં પઢિવજ્જદ ।

તયા કમ્મે સ્થવિત્તાણં સિદ્ધિં ગચ્છદ્ નીરઝો ॥ ૧૪ ॥

(દશ ૦ 424)

14 After completely controlling all the activities, and after attaining the state of Śaileśi, he annihilates all karman, and then being completely free from all karmic dust, he attains siddhi - perfection or liberation

જયા કમ્મે સ્થવિત્તાણં સિદ્ધિં ગચ્છદ્ નીરઝો ।

તયા લોગમસ્થયત્થો સિદ્ધો હવદ્ સાસઝો ॥ ૧૫ ॥

(દશ ૦ 425)

15 After annihilating all karman, having attained perfection, and being free from all karmic dust, he goes to the top of the world, and becomes an eternal, perfect, or liberated soul

Dharmācarana Rules of Conduct

जरामरणवेगेणं बुज्झमाणण पाणिणं ।

धम्मो दीवो पशहा य गर्हं सरणमुत्तम ॥ १ ॥

(३ 23 68)

1 For the living beings who are swept away by the torrential current of old age and death, Dharma, (Religion or Law) is the (only) island, the firm ground or support, the refuge, and the best shelter

Exp Birth is necessarily followed by old age and death cp जातस्य हि ध्रुवो मृत्युः, or मरणं प्रकृतिं शरीरिणाम् । Every creature that is born must grow old and die In some cases, there may not be old age, but nobody can escape death And being caught in this whirl and eddies of birth, age, and death the only firm shelter, like an island in midstream is religion If only people can take shelter there, then alone they will be saved Nothing else can save them The word Dvīpa also means 'one who can protect others' -Śarana

मरिहिसि राय अथा तथा वा मणोरमे कामगुणे विहाय ।

एकं तु धम्मो नरदेव तानं न विज्जई अन्नमिहेह किंचि ॥ २ ॥

(३० 14 40)

2. Oh King ! When you will die, leaving behind all the charming and pleasant things, Dharma (religion) alone will be your best saviour and nothing else

Exp All your worldly possessions, however, great they may be, are of no avail when the hour of death comes. You have to leave everything behind. Your only companion on your journey to the other world will be your good actions, if you have any to your credit.

जरा जाव न पीडेइ चाही जाव न वड्डई ।

जाविदिया न हायंति ताव धम्मं समाचरे ॥ ३ ॥

(दश० ८ ३६)

3 Man should practise religion before old age harasses (cripples) him, before diseases get the better of him (lit go on increasing), and before his senses lose their faculties.

Exp Generally, people postpone practising religion to old age. Youth is regarded as the time for enjoyment of worldly pleasures. But this is fallacious reasoning. In the first place, nobody knows how long he is going to live in this world. And secondly, religious practice is very difficult to be undertaken in old age, when man is weak and feeble, both physically and mentally. It requires a long practice, and sooner one starts it the better. Cp अकालो नास्ति धर्मस्य । or गृहीतं न केशेषु मृत्युना धर्ममाचरेत् ।

जा जा वच्चइ रयणी न सा पाडिनियत्तइ ।

अहम्मं कुणमाणस्स अफला जन्ति राइओ ॥ ४ ॥

जा जा वच्चइ रयणी न सा पाडिनियत्तइ ।

धम्मं च कुणमाणस्स सफला जन्ति राइओ ॥ ५ ॥

(उ० १४-२४-२५)

4 and 5 The day (lit the night) that goes by, will never return one who commits wrong or evil deeds, his days are spent in vain (without any gain)

The day (lit the night) that goes by will never return one who engages himself in religious practices, his days are spent profitably

Exp Time is irreversible Nobody can put the clock back One who does not utilise every single moment of his life in profitable (i e religious) pursuit, is a loser and he can never hope to make good his loss And knowing that time is short , and our life here is uncertain, a man must utilise every single moment at his disposal in the pursuit of religion

धम्मो मंगलमुज्झिहं अहिंसा संजमो तवो ।

देवा वि ते नमसन्ति जस्स धम्मे सया मणो ॥ ६ ॥

(दश० ११)

6 Religion is the most auspicious thing (in the world) and religion consists of Ahimsa—non injury to all living beings, Samyama—self-control and Tapas— austerities. Even the gods bow down to him whose mind is always fixed (engaged) in religion

Exp Man always craves for good and auspicious things and happenings in life But he forgets that there is nothing more auspicious in the world than religion It is the most efficacious amulet to ward off all evils in the world A man who is always devoted to religion is far superior even to gods.

अहिंस सच्चं च अतेणमं च तत्तो य बमं अपरिगहं च ।

पडिबज्जिया पेच महव्ययाणि चरिज्ज घम्मं जिणदेसियं विडू ॥७॥

(३० 21 12)

7 A wise monk should (always) practise the five great vows, viz (1) to refrain from all injury to sentient beings, (2) to speak the truth, (3) not to steal (or not to take anything not given to him), (4) to observe celibacy, and (5) to have no possessions whatsoever, and he should (also) always follow the religion as preached by the Jinas

Exp For those who cannot undertake the five great vows there are the five lesser or minor vows called the five Anuvratas, three Gunavratas, and four Śikṣāvratas. This constitutes the twelve-fold code of conduct for a householder. If it is not possible for a householder to undertake all the twelve vows, then he should at least make a modest beginning, and should exert himself gradually until he is in a position to accept all the vows

[X]

Ahimsā Non-injury (to all sentient beings)

नाह्यदाह्य किंचण ॥ १ ॥

(आवा • I 24)

1 Do not injure any living being

सर्वे पाणा पियाउया सुहस्ताया दुक्खपडिक्खला अप्पियवहा
पियजीविणो जीविउकामा सर्वेसि जीविय पिय ॥ १ ॥

(आवा I 23)

2 All living beings love their (own) life, desire (crave for) pleasures and are averse to pain they dislike any injury to themselves, everybody is desirous of life, and to every living being his own life is very dear

ते से अदियाप ते से अबोहिण ॥ ३ ॥

(आवा I 12)

3 That (i. e. injury to living beings), is always harmful and injurious to himself (i. e. the wrong-doer) : it is the main cause of his non-enlightenment

Exp A person who indulges in doing injury to living beings will not get enlightenment. Himsā is a great impediment in spiritual awakening.

आयाहुल पयासु ॥ ४ ॥

(सू I 11.3)

4 One should treat all creatures as (counterparts of) one's own self

Exp Do unto others as you would like to be done by, this is called the **आत्मौपम्यभाव** One should have the feeling of love towards all the creatures, as if they are a part and parcel of one's own self

एयं खु नाणिणो सारं जं न हिंसाइ किंचण ।

अहिंसा समयं चेव एयावन्तं वियाणिआ ॥ ५ ॥

(सू० I. 11 10)

5 This is the quintessence of (the wisdom of) the wise Not to injure any living being Non-injury to living beings should be regarded as the ' samaya ', - the true preaching of the scriptures (or the essence of the teaching of scriptures)

सबुद्धिमाणे उ नरे मइमं पावाउ अप्पाण निवट्टएज्जा ।

हिंसवन्त्याइं दुहाइं मत्ता घेराणुवन्धीणि महत्तभयाणि ॥ ६ ॥

(सू० I 10 21)

6 Knowing that all the evils and sorrows arise from injury to living beings, and (knowing further) that it leads to unending enmity and hatred, and is the (root) cause of great fear, a wise man, who has become awakened, should refrain from all sinful (harmful) activities

मयं तियायण पाणं अदुवाऽन्नंहिं घायण ।

एणन्त वाणुजाणाउ वेर बट्टुअ अप्पणो ॥ ७ ॥

(सू० I 1.13)

7 If a man kills living beings himself, or causes others to kill them, or (even if he) merely consents to their killing them, (by all these three types of

Himsa), he increases his enmity (hatred) towards living beings

विरए गामधम्मोहिं जे केइ जगई जगा ।

तेसि अन्नवमायाए थामे कुट्टव परिटवए ॥ ८ ॥

(सू० I 11 33)

8. Indifferent to worldly objects (pleasures of senses) he (a monk) should move about, treating all creatures in the world as he himself would like to be treated, and exerting his power in protecting them

जे य बुद्धा अतिकता जे य बुद्धा अणागया ।

संति तेसि पइहाण भूयाण जगई जहा ॥ ९ ॥

(सू० I 11 36)

9 The enlightened ones (i.e. the Tirthamkaras) of the past and those that are to come (i.e. of the future),— all have peace (Ahimsā) as the foundation (of their preaching) just as the earth is the foundation of all things (in this world)

Exp The fundamental basis, or the very foundation of the preaching of all Tirthamkaras of the past, future, as well as the present, is Śānti—peace or in other words Ahimsā

एवमि म आऊ अगणी य वाऊ तणक्खत्तवीया य तस्सा य पाणा ।

पुद्दया ५ आये य जराउ पाणा संसेयया जे रसयामिहाणा ॥१०॥

जे अण्डया ज ५ देयाइ पपसु जाणे पबिलेइ साय ।

एयाई कायाई प ५ ^{household} ^{self} वण्डे पपसु या विप्परियासुविन्ति ॥११॥

एएण काएण य अ

(सू० I 7 12)

Satya Truth

तं सत्त्वं भयव ॥ १ ॥

(प्रथ ॥)

1 Truth is the (highest) Divinity (or divine principle)

पुरिता ' सत्त्वमेव समभिजाणाहि । सद्यस्स आणाप से उवट्ठिण मेहायी मारं तरु ॥ १ ॥

(भाषा १ ३३)

2 Oh Man ! Know thou Truth (to be the highest fundamental principle) or Oh Man ! comprehend (what is) truth The wise man who always abides by the commandment of truth (i e who always adheres to the precepts of truth) goes beyond (i e conquers) death

अप्यण्णा पराया वा कोहा वा जइ वा भया ।

हिंसरं न मुसे ब्रूया नो वि अस्सं वयावण ॥ ३ ॥

(दश ६११)

3 He- (a monk)- should never speak a lie, which is (always) injurious (to living beings) whether for his own sake or for the sake of others, or out of anger or fear he should also not force (influence) others to speak a lie.

Exp People are tempted to tell lies for some gain to themselves, or to others, i e. for material profit

Similarly when a man is angry, or under the influence of fear, he is not his own self and is liable to tell falsehood or half-truths. But a monk must not swerve from the path of truth *under any circumstances*

तदेव सायज्जमुमोयणी गिरा ओहरिणी जा य परोवघायणी ।
से कोह लोह भय हास माणवी न हासमाणो वि गिरं वणज्जा ॥४॥
(दश० 754)

4 Similarly a (wise) monk should never utter words (speech) sinful, or condoning sin (lit giving consent to sin), or categorical ones (making definite assertion), or likely to hurt (the feelings of) others, whether out of anger, greed, fear or jest

सुवक्कसुद्धिं समुपेहिमा सुणी गिरं च इदं परिवज्जय सया ।
मियं अइदं अणुवीदि भासय सयाण मज्जे लहई पसंसजं ॥ ५ ॥
(दश० 755)

5 Always pondering on the purity of speech, a monk should avoid (using) harsh words (Even) when an occasion arises, he should use few words, and these too not bad or harsh, and after carefully weighing them (after careful consideration), such a man is eulogised among the saints (is lauded by good persons)

अप्यस्तिअं जेण मियां आसु कुप्पेज्ज या परो ।
मद्यमो ते न भासिज्जा भासे अदिअगामिणि ॥ ६ ॥
(दश० 848)

6 He (a monk) should never resort to that (type of) injurious or harmful speech, by which he

would lose the confidence of others, or by which others would get angry quickly (i.e. which would provoke others)

Exp Rash and thoughtless words lead to misunderstandings and cause tempers to be frayed. Such speech also makes others lose their confidence in you e.g. elsewhere in *Daśavaśikāhika* (9 in 7) it is said 'Iron darts pain only for a while, and they can be easily extracted but injurious words are hard to be- (cannot be)-extracted, and they result in enmities, and are very terrible in consequences

देवार्ण मनुष्याणे च तिरियाण च युगहे ।

मनुष्याणो जसो होउ मा वा होउ ति नो वय ॥ ७ ॥

(दश 750)

7 When there is a skirmish (fight) going on, be it among celestial beings, human beings, or animals, he should never utter the words, " May such and such (one) be victorious or defeated

Exp A monk should never be a partisan. He should be totally disinterested. In fact he is not even supposed to watch such a fight. But even if it be a sportive fight, he should not side with any of the rival or competing parties, because in that case, he necessarily hurts the feelings of the other party

अणुच्छिन्नो न भासेज्जा भासमाणस्त अंतप ।

विद्विषत्तं न खापेज्जा मायामोस विवज्जय ॥ ८ ॥

(दश 847)

8 He (a monk) should never speak unless spoken to (accosted), nor should he interrupt others in their speech (i.e. should never butt in), he should never be a back-biter, and should (always) avoid deceitful and false statement in his speech.

Exp He should never take the initiative in speech or conversation, but at the same time, should not keep quiet when spoken to. Because that also will be insulting to the other person. Even ordinary decency requires that you should not interrupt a speaker, and start talking yourself, - a fundamental principle in the art of conversation. And the speech must not be full of duplicity, or equivocal i.e. capable of double interpretation. (Like The Greece, the Romans, shall conquer Oracles of Delphi.)

जनपदसम्प्रदायनामि कृत्वे पङ्क्त्यं सञ्चे य ।

व्यवहारभावजोगे दसमे औचम्सञ्चे य ॥ ९ ॥

(प्रज्ञापनासुत-भाष्यपद)

9 There are ten types of 'truth' or true speech, (current in worldly usage) (1) Janapada, (2) Sammata, (3) Sthāpanā, (4) Nāma, (5) Rūpa, (6) Pratitya, (7) Vyavahāra, (8) Bhāva, (9) Yoga and (10) Aupamyā

(1) Janapada-satya Speech conforming to the particular country or province, where one might be living. There are some words which have different meanings in different dialects or different places, e.g. नको means 'idle' in Guj. while it means

'husband in Marathi. A promiscuous use of such words leads to very awkward situations

(2) *Sammata-satya* 'Accepted meanings of words. e. g. *Pañkaja*—means anything born in mud but the accepted meaning of the word is a 'lotus', and so it will not do if you start using the word in the sense of insects and worms, etc

(3) *Sthapana-satya* 'Shape. E.g. we call a particular object as *chair*, another a *table*, etc. or a *glass*, *mirror*, and so on. Similarly the letters of the alphabet, or the various numerals. If people were to go on changing them at their sweet will, then there will be chaos—(Bedlam, or like the tower of Babel)

(4) *Nāma-satya* Proper names, even though they may not be significant, or may belie the present state, still they are to be regarded as true; e.g. a *Laxmicandra* may be a beggar, and *Amaranātha* may be dead

(5) *Rupa-satya* 'Form. An object or a person is that nomenclature only when it, or the person, assumes that form, e.g. a *monk* only when a man sits on saffron cloth, or just as on the stage or screen, people get different names according to their rôles

and elder than his younger brother, or exit and entrance, or up and down

(7) Vyavahāra (or Loka-) satya Worldly or ordinary usage, e.g. when we say 'this road runs parallel', or 'the station has arrived',—actually we go to the station, which is stationary and we are moving. But this is common parlance.

(8) Bhāva-satya General impression When we give a particular nomenclature, or describe a thing because of its certain predominant qualities, that is called Bhāva-satya, e.g. 'the forest is green',—though there may be other colours in it, or a parrot is said to be green though its beak is red.

(9) Yoga-satya Contact or Association. *Because* of certain associations. (or because of his profession); e.g. a tailor, a mason or a teacher etc.; they are always called by that name, really speaking a tailor or a mason are not stitching clothes, or laying bricks all the twentyfour hours, but that name sticks to them.

(10) Upamā-satya Analogy. Here the analogy is not to be stretched Moon-like face, lotus-eyed, nectar-like words, etc

कोहे माणे माया लोम पेडजे तंत्र्य दाम य ।

हासे मय अकसाडय उवचाण निम्मिया दमया ॥ १८ ॥

(प्रणाम मूर्त-माया)

10 The following ten types of speech are said to be 'false speech' Viz speech based on or as a result of (1) anger (2) pride (3) deceit, (4) greed, (5) love, (6) hatred, (7) jest, (8) fear, (9) imagination and (10) injury

'husband' in Marathi. A promiscuous use of such words leads to very awkward situations.

(2) *Sammata-satya* 'Accepted meanings of words. e. g. *Pankaja*—means anything born in mud but the accepted meaning of the word is a 'lotus', and so it will not do if you start using the word in the sense of insects and worms, etc.

(3) *Sthāpanā-satya* 'Shape. Eg. we call a particular object as chair, another a table, etc. or a glass, mirror, and so on. Similarly the letters of the alphabet, or the various numerals. If people were to go on changing them at their sweet will, then there will be chaos—(Bedlam, or like the tower of Babel)

(4) *Nāma-satya* Proper names, even though they may not be significant, or may belie the present state still they are to be regarded as true; e.g. a *Laxmīcandra* may be a beggar, and *Amaranātha* may be dead.

(5) *Rūpa-satya* 'Form. An object or a person gets that nomenclature only when it, or the person, assumes that form, e. g. a monk, only when a man puts on saffron cloth, or just as on the stage or screen, people get different names according to their roles.

(6) *Pratitya-satya* Relative truth. When we use terms such as light or heavy, big or small, young or old, these are all in relation to certain other objects. e.g. the same man is younger than his older brother.

and elder than his younger brother, or exit and entrance, or up and down

(7) Vyavahāra (or Loka-) satya Worldly or ordinary usage, e g when we say 'this road runs parallel', or 'the station has arrived',—actually we go to the station, which is stationary and we are moving. But this is common parlance

(8) Bhāva-satya General impression. When we give a particular nomenclature, or describe a thing because of its certain predominant qualities, that is called Bhāva-satya, e g 'the forest is green',—though there may be other colours in it, or a parrot is said to be green, though its beak is red.

(9) Yoga-satya Contact or Association Because of certain associations, (or because of his profession); e g a tailor, a mason, or a teacher etc, they are *always* called by that name, really speaking a tailor or a mason are not stitching clothes, or laying bricks all the twentyfour hours, but that name sticks to them.

(10) Upamā-satya Analogy Here the analogy is not to be stretched Moon-like face, lotus-eyed; nectar-like words, etc

कोहि माणे माया लोमि पेज्जे तहेच दोसे य ।

हासे भय अकलात्रय उवचाए निस्तिया दसमा ॥ १० ॥

(प्रशापनसूत्र-भाषावद्)

10 The following ten types of speech are said to be 'false speech' Viz, speech based on, or as a result of (1) anger, (2) pride, (3) deceit, (4) greed, (5) love (6) hatred, (7) jest, (8) fear, (9) imagination and (10) injury

[XIII]

Brahmacarya The Vow of Celibacy

लोकुत्तमं यं वयमिणं ॥ १ ॥

(प्रश्न वयम् IV 1)

1 Thus -(celibacy) -is the best among all the vows in the world,

ब्रह्मचरे उत्तमतयं नियम-जाण-ईसण-चरित्त-सम्मत्तं विणम्वुल्लं ॥ १ ॥
(प्रश्न वयं IV 1)

2. Celibacy is the (root) cause of excellent austerities, vows (rules) knowledge, faith, conduct, righteousness and discipline

Exp All these excellent qualities follow as a natural cotrollary once a monk observes perfect celibacy

एकस्मिं ब्रह्मचरे जमिं य आराहियमि आराहियं वयमिणं सध्वं
तस्मां निहुण्णं वयमेरं चरियत्वं ॥ ३ ॥

(प्रश्न वयं IV 1)

3 With the single vow of celibacy practised (to perfection) it may be taken that he has practised the multitude of the best of vows, therefore, a monk (who wishes to attain perfection), should practise celibacy with firmness

तयेसु या उत्तमं ब्रह्मचरे ॥ ४ ॥

(सू. I 6 23)

4 Among all the austerities, celibacy is the best (highest)

अवभवन्निचं घोरं पमायं दुरहिदियं ।

नायरेति मुणी लोप मेयाययणवज्जिणो ॥ ५ ॥

(दश० 6.16)

5 Non-celibacy-(breach of celibacy)-is the most horrible carelessness (breach of discipline), the worst offence that could be committed, and hence the monks, who are keen on keeping themselves aloof from any (likely) breach of conduct, never think of practising non-celibacy.

मूलमेयमहम्भस्स महादोससमुत्सयं ।

तम्हा मेहुणसंसमं निगंथा वज्जयंति णं ॥ ६ ॥

(दश० 6.17)

6 This-(non-celibacy)-is the root of all sins, and a multitude of all great faults, and therefore, the monks always refrain from non-celibacy of any sorts whatsoever

जे विन्नवणाहिअजोसिया संतिण्णेहि समं विद्याहिया ।

तम्हा उडुं ति पासहा अदक्खु कामादं रोमदं ॥ ७ ॥

(सू० I 232)

7 Those who resist the seductions (of women) are treated (placed) on par with those who have crossed the samsāra (worldly existence) Therefore, look up (i.e keep the high ideal of Mokṣa in view) They (i.e the virtuous) regard pleasures as equal to disease.

देवदाणवगंधद्या जक्खन्तस्ससकिज्जरा ।

वेभयारि नमसति दुक्करं जे करति तं ॥ ८ ॥

(दश० 1.11)

जहा विरालावसहस्र मूले न मृतमार्गं वसही वसत्याः ।
 एतेव इत्यनिष्ठवस्स भयं न भयमारिस्स समो निवासो ॥१५॥
 (व 32-13)

15 Just as it is not good (safe) for mice to live near the dwelling place of a cat, even so, it is not safe for a celibate monk to live in a house inhabited by women

Exp Staying under the same roof, i.e. in one and the same house with women, is also dangerous for a celibate monk. He should never take such a risk

जहा कुक्कुटपोषस्स निच्चं कुल्लओ मय ।
 एवं तु भयमारिस्स इत्यविगाहओ भयं ॥ १६ ॥
 (वस 8 54)

16 Just as the young chicken are in constant dread and fear from a cat, even so a celibate monk is also in constant danger from the body of a woman.

विसमिंसि न निज्जाय नारिं वा सुअर्त्तकिरं ।
 मखरं पिय वद्दव्वं विट्ठि पविसमाहरि ॥ १७ ॥
 (वस 8-55)

17 He (a monk) should not gaze at walls having paintings (of women), nor at a woman who is well-decorated on seeing them (accidentally) he should withdraw his gaze (instantly) as on looking at the sun.

जइ तं काहिंसी भावं जा जा इच्छसि नारिओ ।

वायाविद्धो व्य हद्दो अट्टिअप्पा भविस्ससि ॥ १८ ॥

(उ० 22 44)

18 If you fall in love with every woman you see, then you will be as unsteady as a Hadha plant, which is wafted (driven) by the wind

Exp Hadha is a frail aquatic plant, 'Pistia Stratiotes', which is shaken even by a very gentle breeze, as it has no firm roots

विभूसा इत्थिसंस्तग्गी पर्णायं रस्तभोवणं ।

नरस्सत्तग्गवेस्सिस्स विसं तालउडं जहा ॥ १९ ॥

(इ० 857)

19 Personal toilet (decorating the body), contact with women, and taking rich and dainty food, all this is like the (deadly) Tālaputa poison to one who is seeking self-realisation

पर्णायं भत्तपाणं तु लिप्पं मयविचट्ठणं ।

वमचेरओ भिक्खु निच्चसो परिउज्जय ॥ २० ॥

(उ० 167)

20 Well-dressed (well-seasoned) food quickly arouses passions, a monk, who is intent on practising celibacy, should always avoid such food

Exp The food one eats has a great effect on one's mind and behaviour. Pranita-smagdha, food consisting of milk, ghee, curds oil and jaggery, honey and sweets, are called smagdha. A celibate monk should avoid such food, as it is conducive to passion

धम्मलब्धं मिय काले जत्तार्थं पणिहाणव ।

नादमर्त्तं तु भुजिज्जा वमचेरखो सया ॥ ११ ॥

(उ- 168)

21 One who is intent on practising celibacy should always eat his food collected according to rules (in that behalf), in a measured quantity (limited) at the proper (prescribed) hour with a peaceful mind (i.e. not allowing the mind to wander), and just for the sustenance of life, and that too never in excess

Exp He should eat food only because it is the means for the sustenance of the body, and not for the taste and enjoyment of it

विभूत परियज्जेज्जा सरीरपरिमंढण ।

वमचेरखो भिक्खुं सिगारत्थं न धारय ॥ १२ ॥

(उ- 169)

22 A monk intent on practising the vow of celibacy should abstain from ornaments, and should not do anything whatsoever to adorn or decorate his body in any manner

सदे कखे य मंधे य रसे फासे तहेव य ।

पचविदे काम्मण्ये निरुचसो परियज्जप ॥ १३ ॥

(उ- 1610)

23 He (a monk) should always abstain from the five-fold pleasant things (objects giving pleasures), and sounds, colours, smells, tastes and touch

हुज्जप काममाणे य निरुचसो परियज्जप ।

सकायणाणि सखीणि वज्जेज्जा पणिहाणय ॥ १४ ॥

(उ- 1614)

24 One who is full of equanimity (or concentration), should always abandon pleasures of senses, which are hard to leave, and should also avoid all such spots (or objects) which are likely to cast aspersions (on his chastity)

Exp Even in everyday life, if a man is found in bad locality, or with people of objectionable and suspicious character, then people begin to doubt his character. A monk, then, has got to be very careful so far as his behaviour and movements are concerned

विस्तण्णु मणुञ्जेसु पेमं नाभिनिवेसप ।

अणिच्चं तेहिं विनाय परिणामं पुग्गलाण य ॥ २५ ॥

(दस० ८ ५९)

25 He (a monk) should not form attachment for the pleasurable things such as sound, colours, smells, tastes and touch, particularly because he should realise their transitory nature, and also the transitory nature of all material objects

Exp. Pudgala is 'matter' — Jada, and is shortlived

पोग्गलाण परिणामं तेहिं नच्चा जहा सहा ।

विणीयतण्हो विहरे सीईभूएण अप्पणा ॥ २६ ॥

(दस० ८ ६०)

26 Knowing the real nature of matter and their effects (परिणाम), he (a monk) should move about, free from all cravings and with a pacified (tranquil) soul, (not perturbed by anything in the world)

[XIV]

Aparigraha Non-possession

धनधन्यपेसवग्नेसु परिगहयिवज्जण ।

सव्वारमपरिच्चाओ निम्ममत्त सुदुक्कर ॥ १ ॥

(उ 19 29)

1 To renounce all sense of possession (or claim) with regard to wealth, corn, and servants, to abstain from all harmful undertakings (Ārambha), and not to entertain any feeling of possession or attachment. This is a (very) difficult vow.

Exp. Mama-nine. Not to call anything as 'one's own' is Nirmamatva. The possessive instinct is very deep-rooted in man and it is very difficult to uproot it. Even a beggar is attached to his rags, and broken earthen pots.

चित्तमेतमचित्तं वा परिगिज्झ किस्सामवि ।

अन्न वा अणुजाणाइ एव दुक्खा ण मुच्चइ ॥ १ ॥

(सू. I 11.2)

2 He, who possesses (owns) even a small property in living or non living things, or consents to others possessing it, will never be delivered from misery.

Exp. 'Cittamantamacittam' Living and lifeless things. Here the words may be taken in their broad sense and not in the technical sense, i.e. cattle lands and houses etc.

परिव्ययन्ते अणित्तकामे अहो य राओ परितप्यमाणे ।

अन्नप्यमन्ते घणमेसमाणे पप्पोति मच्छुं पुरिसे जर्ज च ॥ ३ ॥

(उ० 14 14)

3 While a man moves about (in this saṃsāra) without abstaining from pleasures, and torments himself day and night, being careless—(engaged in sinful activities), for the sake of others, and seeks (more and more) wealth, (all of a sudden) he reaches old age and death

आत्मस्वयं चेव अबुद्धमाणे ममाह से साहसकारि मंद ।

अहो य राओ परितप्यमाणे अट्टेसु सुढे अजरामरेव ॥ ४ ॥

(सू० L10 18)

4 Not being aware (conscious) that his life is being exhausted (every second), or will (soon) have an end, a rash and foolish man is always saying ' this is mine, this is mine ', (or a person, given to such possessive instincts, the fool, always embarks on fresh and rash activities) He torments (exerts) himself day and night, being greedy for wealth, and thinking himself to be immune from old age and death

Exp. Man embarks on all sorts of endless activities, thinking that he is going to stay in this world forever But he never realises that age and death are creeping slowly but steadily And death never gives a warning, or does not care to knock at the door when it wants to pounce on a man !

माहणा वसिया वेस्ता चण्डाला अद् बोक्कसा ।

वासिया वसिया सुद्धा जे य आरम्भानिस्सिया ॥ ५ ॥

परिमहनिचिद्धाण वर तेस्सि पवहुइ ।

आरभसंभिया कामा न ते दुक्खविमोयगा ॥ ६ ॥

(सू० 192-3)

5 & 6 *Brahmanas, Ksatriyas, Vaisyas, Candalas, Bukkasas hunters (Esiyas), merchants (Besiyas), Sudras, and others who are engaged in harmful undertakings (Arambha), the iniquity (hatred) of all these men who are possessed with a sense of property, goes on increasing, pleasures are always obtained by sinful activities, and they are never capable of freeing men from misery*

Exp Bukkasa—A mixed race Vaisika—Merchants. Persons who are entangled in worldly undertakings only perpetuate or prolong their rivalries, jealousies and hatred. And any amount of worldly possessions and pleasures will never really free a man from sorrows and misery

जे पायकम्मोहिं धण मणूसा समाधयन्ती अमइ गहाय ।

पहाय ते पात्तपयट्ठिप नरे वेराणुषद्धा णरयं उवेन्ति ॥ ७ ॥

(उ 42)

7 Men, who under evil influence—(being misguided)—acquire wealth by evil deeds, (are forced to) abandon it, and being ensnared (by their passions) and with their hatred ever on the increase, (ultimately) go to hell

थावरं जंगम चेव धनं धनं उच्यते ।

पञ्चमाणस्त कर्मेहि नालं दुःखात् मोक्षे ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० 66)

8 Immovable and movable property, wealth, corn and other means (perquisites),—none of these are capable of freeing a man, from misery, who is suffering from the ripening (fruition) of his actions

स्वेतं बन्धुं हिरण्यं च पुत्रदारं च बन्धवा ।

चक्ष्ता णं इमं वेहं गन्तव्यमवसस्ति मे ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 1916)

9 Every man should think that he has to depart certainly one day, leaving behind fields, house, gold, sons and wife (ie family), relations,—(in fact) leaving (even) his body

Exp A man should always bear this in mind that when the time comes to exit from this world he cannot take anything with him, not even his own body

कस्मिन् पि जो इमं लोचं पणिपुणं दलेज्ज इहस्स ।

तेणावि से न संतुस्से इह दुष्कुरण इमे आया ॥ १० ॥

(उ० 816)

10 If somebody were to give the whole earth to one man, even then the man will not be satisfied, a (greedy) person is extremely difficult to be satisfied

Exp We have the story of the king Alexander the Great, who was not satisfied even after conquering the whole world !

सुवर्णरूपस उ प वया मये सिया ह् केल्लाससमा असखया ।
 नरस्स लुद्धस्स न तहि किञ्चि इच्छा ह् अगाससमा अर्णतिया ॥११॥
 (उ 948)

11 If there were innumerable mountains of gold and silver, (each) as big as the Kailasa mountain, they are nothing to a greedy man, (i.e. even they will not satisfy him) for desire (craving) is boundless like space.

Exp Cp Mahābhārata

एतं धुविष्णो मंदिरं दिव्यं वसुधै कृता ।

नानि एतस्य तत्र सर्वं इति मत्वा राम व्रजेत् ॥

(लघोऽर्क 39 5 69)

वित्तेन ताण न लभे पमज्जे इमम्मि लोप अदुया परत्था ।

वीवप्पणद्धे च अर्णतमोहे नेयाठयं पद्दुममद्दुमेव ॥ १२ ॥

(उ 45)

12. Wealth will not afford protection either in this world or in the next, to a careless (sinful) man, whose light of knowledge is extinguished. Such a person may see the right path, but being under the influence of delusion he will act like a person who has lost his light, and is enveloped in pitchy darkness.

विद्याणिवा दुस्तविवद्वज्ज घणे ममस्तबन्ध च महम्मयावह ।

सुखावह धम्मधुर अयुत्तर धारेज्ज निव्वाणमुणावहं मह ॥१३॥

(उ 1998)

13 Realising that wealth merely increases your sorrows and worries, and the bonds of attachment (possession) bring in their wake great dangers, you should bear the excellent yoke of religion, which will give you real pleasure, and will also bring you the great happiness (and bliss) of Nirvāṇa (mokṣa)

जं पि वतथं व पायं वा केवलं पायपुच्छणं ।

सं पि संजमलज्जट्ठा धारेन्ति परिहिति य ॥ १४ ॥

(दश० ६ २०)

14 And whatever (requisites like) clothing, vessel, blanket, or broom that they (the monks) possess or wear, is purely for (facilitating) self-control, and out of a sense of decency or modesty (लज्जा), (there is no sense of attachment)

न सो परिग्गहो वुत्तो नायपुत्तेण ताइणा ।

मुच्छा परिग्गहो वुत्तो इह वुत्तं महेस्सिणा ॥ १५ ॥

(दश० ६ २१)

15 That- (the possession of requisites)- is not called 'possession' by the great saviour-(the illustrious)- Nāyaputta The great sage has declared that greed or covetousness is possession

Exp. Cp मिथिलायां दह्यमानाया न मे दह्यति किञ्चन । (This is found in Buddhist and Brahmanical literature also)-

Tāi from Trāṭṭi-Saviour, or from Tāḍḍi-like that, illustrious Nāyaputta-The scion of the Dnyātt or Nāga clan

सव्वत्थुवाहिणा बुद्धा संरक्खणपरिग्गहे ।

अवि अप्पणी वि देहम्मि नाधरंति ममाइयं ॥ १६ ॥

(दश० ६ २२)-

16 The enlightened ones, though they possess and carefully guard their requisites, still they do not have any attachment or sense of 'mine-ness' for those articles, why, they do not have that sense of attachment even towards their own bodies '

Sādhu Dharma Duties of a Monk

देवलोमसमाणो य परियाओ महेशिण ।

रयाण अरयाण अ महानरयसारिसो ॥ १ ॥

(दश च 110)

1 The ascetic life of those, who are intent on (or take delight in) self-control, is comparable to living in heaven while (the life of) those, who do not practise self-control, is like living in hell

आयावयाही चय सोअमल्ल कामे कमाही कमियं खु दुक्खं ।

छिंवाहि दोसं विणएज्ज राग एव सुद्धी होहिसि सपराय ॥ १ ॥

(दश 25)

2. Mortify yourself give up (the feeling of) tenderness (for the body) conquer desires, and then you will realise that you have conquered (all) sorrow and misery cut off all types of attachment, suppress hatred, and thus (alone) you will be happy in this *samsara* (worldly existence)

सहेव भत्तपाणेसु पयणे पयावणेसु य ।

पाणमूयदयद्वाप न एप न ययावय ॥ ३ ॥

(उ 3510)

3 Similarly in cooking food and drink, or getting it cooked, (there is great loss of all sorts of life) out of compassion for living beings, he (a monk) should not cook, nor cause others to cook (food etc)

एषयाऽचेले होइ सचेले यावि एषया ।
पर्यं धम्महियं नच्चा नार्णी नो परिदेवए ॥ ४ ॥

(३० 2 13)

4 There may be a time when he will have no clothes, on other occasions he may have some But knowing that (either of) this (state) is beneficial (for his religious practice), a wise (monk) should not be sorry for it

संतता केसलोएणे धेमचेरपराइया ।

तथ मन्दा विसीयन्ति मच्छा विद्धा व केयणे ॥ ५ ॥

(सू० I 3 1.13)

5 Some weak (monks), who are tormented at (the thought of) plucking out the hair, and who find it too hard to practise celibacy, become disheartened like fish hooked by bait (or caught in the nets)

अहा संगमकालमि पिट्ठो भीरु पेहइ ।

चलयं गहणं नृमं को जाणइ पराजयं ॥ ६ ॥

एव तु समणा एगे अवलं मच्छाण अप्परां ।

अणागयं भयं विस्त अविक्कप्पंतिमं सुयं ॥ ७ ॥

(सू० I 3 3 1 & 3)

6 & 7 Just as at the hour of the battle, a coward looks behind for a ditch, thicket, or some other hiding place, always distressed with the thought 'who knows who will lose (or win)' ? Similarly some monks, knowing themselves to be weak (in practising self-control) and being conscious of future (impending) peril (lit fear), have recourse to worldly sciences (like grammar, astrology, etc.)

Exp Just as a coward, instead of concentrating on fight, and fighting with all his might, makes sure of a hideout, or a place of shelter in case of defeat, similarly weak-minded monks, who are afraid of facing privations and wants, in case they do not get food, or clothing etc by begging, try to master worldly sciences, as something to fall back upon, hoping to earn their living on the strength of these sciences.

जे उ संगमकालम्नि नाथा सूरपूरंगमा ।

नो ते पिद्वसुवेर्हि कि पर मरणं सिया ॥ ८ ॥

(सू I 336)

8 But the famous warriors and valiant heroes, and leaders (of men), never look back at the time of the battle. (They think) the worst that can happen is We shall embrace death

Exp Cp A man can die but once. But cowards die many a death

जे लङ्कलणं सुविण पञ्जमाणे निमित्तकोरुहलसंपगाढे ।

कुहेडविज्जासवदारजीवी न गच्छइ सरणं तम्मि काले ॥ ९ ॥

(उ 2045)

9 He (the monk) who practises divination from bodily marks, (palmistry) and dreams, who is well-versed,—or who always indulges—in the practice of augury (astrology) and superstitious rites, who earns a sinful living by practising black magic, will find no refuge at the (crucial) time (i.e the hour of retribution)

जे सिया सन्निहीकामे गिही पव्वइए न से ॥ १० ॥

(दश० 6 19)

10 He, who is desirous of storing- (laying by provisions, such as ghee, sugar etc), is a householder and not a monk

कहं तु कुज्जा सामणं जो कामे न निवारए ।

पप पप विसीयंतो संकप्यस्त वसं गओ ॥ ११ ॥

(दश० 2 1)

11 How can he, who cannot control his passions, and who is swayed away by distracting thoughts and is disheartened (discouraged) at every step, can ever possibly practise the rules of asceticism ?

Exp A monk must have perfect faith in what he has undertaken, and must not entertain doubts and misgivings regarding the course of conduct prescribed by the preceptors He must not also lose heart and faith in himself

सुक्कज्झाणं श्रियाणज्जा अनियाणे अकिंचणे ।

वोसट्ठकाए विहरेज्जा आव कालस्स पज्जओ ॥ १२ ॥

(उ० 35 19)

12 He (a monk) should always concentrate on the highest and most pure type of meditation, be free from Nidāna-(i e craving for worldly or temporal gains in lieu of his austerities), should possess nothing, and move about (in the world) completely disregarding his body, till such time as death overtakes him

and attractive, even when he commands them, and possesses them, he *alone* is called the (true) renouncer

Exp A beggar, for instance cannot enjoy many of the worldly pleasures. But that does not mean that he has renounced them

छज्जीवकाय असमारमता मोक्षं अर्क्षं च असेयमाणा ।

परिमहे श्रुत्यो माणमार्यं पय परिनाय चरन्ति वन्ता ॥ १८ ॥

(व० 12 41)

18 Undertaking no injurious activity towards the six-fold living beings, never resorting to falsehood and stealing (lit. that which is not given), renouncing (all) property, women, pride and deceit, thus live those who are truly self-controlled

निर्दं च न बहु भवेज्जा सप्यहासं विवर्जय ।

मिहोक्ताहर्हि न रमे सज्झायम्मि एवो सया ॥ १९ ॥

(दश० 8 42)

19 He (a monk) should not care for (be fond of) sleep, should avoid cutting jokes (and indulging in laughter), should not take interest in the secrets (of others), (but) should always be occupied and interested in (or devoted to) his studies

निम्ममो निरहेकारो निस्संभो चसगारयो ।

समी अ सव्ययूथसु तसेसु थावरेसु य ॥ २० ॥

(३ 19 83)

20 He (a monk) is without any possessions, without egotism without attachment, without vanity or conceit he is impartial towards all living beings, whether mobile or immobile.

लामालामे सुहे दुक्खे जीविण मरणे तहा ।

समो निदोषसंसासु तहा माणावमाणओ ॥ २१ ॥

(३० 19 90)

21 He is indifferent to success or failure, happiness and misery, life and death, as also to censure or praise, and honour or insults

Exp. This is the state of what the Bhagavad-gītā describes as a स्थितप्रज्ञ—a perfectly poised, or balanced soul. Nothing ever disturbs the peace of his mind. Success does not go to his head, nor does failure depress him. He is unmoved whether he receives bouquets or brickbats, and whether people heap encomium on him or calumny

अणिस्सिओ इह लोण परलोण अणिस्सिओ ।

वासीचंदणकप्पो य असणे अणसणे तहा ॥ २२ ॥

(३० 19 92)

22 He (a monk) is not interested in this world as well as in the next. He is equally indifferent whether he gets food or not (i e whether he eats or has to fast), on the analogy of one who is indifferent whether he is anointed with sandal paste or whether his limb is cut off with an axe

Exp Cp Mahābhārata XII 9 25

वास्वैरु तक्षतो बाहु चन्दनेवैकमुक्षत ।

वाकसपाण स कल्याण चित्तमनुभवोस्तथो ॥

निज्जुद्धिअण आहारं कालधम्ममे उच्चट्ठिए ।

जहिअण माणुसं चोर्वि पट्ट दुक्खो विमुच्चार्ह ॥ २३ ॥

निम्नमो निरहकारो वीथरागो अणासवो ।

सप्तो केवल नाण सासव परिणिब्बुप ॥ २४ ॥

(उ० 35 20-21)

23 & 24 Renouncing (all) food when the time of his death arrives, and discarding the human body, he becomes his own master and is freed from (all) misery Without any possessions (or property), without egoism free from love (and hatred i.e. passions), and the influx of Karman (Āsrava), he obtains absolute knowledge, and (ultimately) reaches eternal Nirvāṇa (liberation)

वाहिओ वा अरोणी या सिणाण जो उ पत्थए ।

वुक्कतो होए आयातो जहो हवइ संयमो ॥ २५ ॥

सतिमे सुद्धमा पाणा घसासु भिज्जुगासु य ।

जे य मिक्खु सिणायतो विथडेणुप्पिलावए ॥ २६ ॥

तम्हा ते न सिणायति सीएण उप्पिणेण वा ।

जावज्जीवे वय घोरे अस्सिणाणमहिट्ठमा ॥ २७ ॥

(दश० 6-61-63)

25, 26 & 27 Whether ill or in good health, if he (a monk) desires to bathe his duty (right course of conduct) is violated and his self-control thrown overboard (abandoned) There are (innumerable) subtle living organisms in salt soil, and cracks or hollow grounds (clefts), which a monk is likely to flood with water (and consequently cause them harm) when he is bathing, though it be with pure (boiled) water They (the monks) therefore, never bathe in cold or hot water, having undertaken the

terrible vow of abstaining from bath throughout their life.

अर्थमयमि आहृत्ते पुरत्या य अणुगारे ।

आहारमादयं सद्य मणसा वि न पत्यण ॥ २८ ॥

(दश० ८ २८)

28 After sun-set, and before the sun has arisen in the east (i.e. before sunrise), he (a monk) should not even think (in his mind) about food etc

Exp He should banish from his mind even the thoughts about food, drink, etc from sunset to sunrise, i.e. at night

सन्तिमे सुहुमा पाणा तसा अदुव थावरा ।

जाई राओ अपासंतो कहमेसणियं चरे ॥ २९ ॥

(दश० ६ २४)

29 There are numerous subtle living beings, mobile as well as immobile, being unable to notice them at night, how can he move about (at night) in search of pure alms ?

सव्वाहारं न भुंजति निर्गन्था रात्रभोषणं ॥ ३० ॥

(दश० ६ २५)

30 That is why Jain monks (Nirgranthas) never eat any food after sunset

चउधिवे वि आहारे रात्रभोषणवज्जणं ।

संनिर्हासिंचओ वेव वज्जेयत्तो सुदुकरं ॥ ३१ ॥

(स० १९ ३०)

31 Not to eat after sunset any of the four types of food, not to put away for later use, or to keep

a store of things (one may need) this is a difficult vow

Exp A monk is not to store *anything*, not even salt for the next day

कहं चरे कह बिट्ठे कहं भासे कहं सप ।

कह भुंजतो भासतो पाव कम्मं न वेधई ॥ ३१ ॥

जयं चरे जय बिट्ठे जय आसे जय सप ।

जय भुंजतो भासतो पाव कम्मं न वेधई ॥ ३२ ॥

(दृष्ट 47-8)

32 & 33 (The disciple asks the Preceptor) —
“How should he (a true monk) walk? How should he stand? How should he talk? How should he lie down (sleep)? How should he eat or talk, so that he may not bind sinful karman? (The Preceptor answers) —“He (a true monk) should walk, stand, sit, or sleep with proper (self-) control. Eating and speaking with proper control, he will not bind any sinful karman around the soul

जहा इमस्स पुण्हेसु ममरो आविस्सं रस ।

ण य पुण्णं किलमेव सो य एणिव अपप्य ॥ ३४ ॥

एमेव समणो भुत्ता जे लोप सति साहुणो ।

विहगमा व पुण्हेसु दाणमसेखजे रया ॥ ३५ ॥

(दृष्ट 12-3)

34 & 35 Just as a bee sucks the honey from (within) the flowers of a tree, but never harms the flower (or the tree) while it satisfies itself, even so the monks, who are free (from greed, and attach-

ment), and who are bent on attaining peace and equanimity in this world, are engrossed in seeking pure (and acceptable) food and drink, like bees (collecting honey) from the flowers.

महूकारसमा बुद्धा जे भवंति अणिस्सिया ।

नाणार्पिद्वया दंता तेज बुच्चंति साहुणो ॥ ३६ ॥

(दश० 1.5)

36 The enlightened monks, who are completely detached (disinterested in the world), who are keen on receiving alms from different places (and not from one place only), and who are self-controlled, are like the bees, and that is why they are called the (true) monks

उपपणं नादहीलेज्जा अप्यं वा बहु फासुयं ।

मुहालद्धं मुहाजीवी भुंजिज्जा दोसवज्जियं ॥ ३७ ॥

(दश० 5 1.99)

37 He (a monk) should not condemn—(look down upon)—pure and acceptable food that he may have obtained, whether scanty or plenty, living on nothing (i.e. not getting his food for any services rendered), and having obtained the food for nothing, he should eat it, avoiding all faults (in eating)

Exp. Muhāladḍha Obtained for nothing—i.e. alms received in a pure spirit, and not in return for any service rendered Muhājīvī—One who lives on nothing A monk should not try to render any service to anybody for his food

Faults of eating —There are various faults to be scrupulously avoided by a monk even when eating the food he has received as alms e.g. he must show the food to the preceptor, should invite a sick brother-monk to partake of the food, and then should eat the food without paying any attention to its taste.

अलोले न रसे गिस्ते जिग्मादते अमुच्छिष्टे ।

न रसद्वारे भुजिञ्जा जवणद्वारे महाकुणी ॥ ३८ ॥

(३ 35 17)

38 A (true) monk should not eat for the sake of the delicious taste (of the food), but for the maintenance (sustenance) of life (and body), not being greedy for delicacies, nor eager for good fare, and restraining (curbing) his tongue and being free from cupidity

[XVI]

A True Monk

निकलम्ममाणाइ अ बुद्धवयणे निच्चं चित्तसमाहिजो हविज्जा ।

इत्थीण वसे न गच्छे वतं नो पडिआयइ जे स भिक्खू ॥ १ ॥

(दश० 10.1)

1. He who, at the behest of the Enlightened Ones (Prophets), has renounced the world, who is always unperturbed and tranquil, is never caught in the clutches of women, and (finally) who never drinks back his vomit (i.e. never craves after pleasures etc. that he has once renounced, or forsworn), —he alone is a true monk

Exp. Vāntam no paḍāyayī Vāntam no pratyā-pibati This is a peculiar expression very often used in the Jain Āgamas. A monk, who after renouncing all worldly pleasures, is again attracted by them, is said to be like one who drinks what he has vomitted.

चत्तारि वसे सया कसाण धुवजोगी य हवेज्ज बुद्धवयणे ।

अहणे निज्जायइवरयण गिहिजोगं परिवज्जय जे स भिक्खू ॥ २ ॥

(दश० 10.6)

2 One who has completely abandoned (lit. vomitted) the four passions, is firm and steady in the observance of rules as laid down —(ordained)— by the Enlightened Ones, who is without any property, not owning silver, gold (or any other precious articles), and who avoids (all) contacts with householders, —he is a true monk

(all contact with) women, realising that his religious practices are the best (thing for him), he should firmly concentrate there (i.e. be strict in their observance)

बहुं सु सुणिणो भव अणगारस्स भिक्खुणो ।
सव्वओ विप्यमुक्कस्स एगन्तमणुपस्सओ ॥ १० ॥

(३० 9-16)

10 There is great well-being (happiness) in store for a homeless monk, an ascetic, who is absolutely free from all ties, and realises (knows) himself to be alone and unconnected with anybody (in the world).

ते देहवासं असुरं असासयं सया चए निव्वहिअट्ठिअप्पा ।
छिंदित्तु जार्हमरणस्स बंधणं उवह भिक्खु अणुणागम गह ॥ ११ ॥

(दस 10 21)

11 He (the monk), who is keen on achieving the eternal well-being of the soul, who is ever ready to abandon this impure and transitory physical existence (temporary residence) and who, having cut asunder the ties (bonds) of birth and death, (he alone) attains that (perennial) state of existence (viz. mokṣa) from where there is no return

Aṣṭapravacana-Mātaraḥ : The Eight Mothers, or Fundamental Articles of the Creed

अट्ट पवयणमायाओ समिई गुप्ती तहेव य ।

पंचेव य समिईओ तओ गुप्तीओ आहिया ॥ १ ॥

(ङ० 24.1)

1 The Eight Articles (or Mothers) of the Creed are the Samutis and the Guptis. The Samutis are five, and the Guptis are three.

Exp Māyā — (1) Mātā (Matr)—Mother, or Māta or Mātrā. This may be derived from the root Mā—to find room in, or to measure, and denotes that which includes in itself other things. It may also mean 'Mother', from Mātr. But this is an obviously intentional double meaning —Jacobi.

Samuti — Sangati, or Samyakpravṛtti — correct attitude, procedure or behaviour.

Gupti — is guarding oneself against moral lapses, with the intention of following the correct path. A monk must follow the rigid path of virtue, and must steer clear of, or guard himself against, the pitfalls on the way. One who masters these eight fundamentals, can be said to be conversant with the kernel of the whole scripture.

इरियाभासेसणावाणे उच्चारें समिह इय ।

मणुगुप्ती वयगुप्ती कायगुप्ती य अट्टमा ॥ २ ॥

(२० 242)

2 The 5 mitis are (1) Iryā miti carefulness in walking (2) Bha ā miti carefulness in speech (3) E ana amiti carefulness in receiving alms (4) Ād na-miti carefulness in taking and leaving -(handling)- the necessary things (or requisites) and (5) Uccāra (-prasavāna) miti carefulness in answering the calls of nature, and disposing of things not wanted

The Guptis are (1) Manogupti control of the mind (2) Vākgupti control of speech and (3) Kāyagupti control of the body These together constitute the Eight Samitis.

Exp - The Guptis also are included in the Samitis in the wider sense of the term !

एयाओ अट्ट समिहओ समासेण विद्याहिया । ६॥

इवालसंगं जिणवसाय माय कथ उ पययण ॥ ३ ॥

(३ 243)

3 These are the eight Samitis which have been briefly explained (enumerated), in which the entire preaching (creed), taught by the Jinas and set forth in the twelve Aṅgas, is contained ६॥ ३

Exp The preaching of Śramana Bhagawān Mahāvira was compiled by the Ganadharas, the eleven immediate disciples of Lord Mahāvira, and compiled

in the form of the Twelve Añgas This creed or gospel explains at length the Three Jewels—Samyak Darśana, Jñāna, and Cāritrya, but as the latter is the most important and an essential pre-requisite of mokṣa, Samyak-cāritrya has been treated more exhaustively. It is also termed as Yoga-sādhana The Eight Samitis are like Mothers (Aṣṭa-mātaraḥ), who guard and protect the creed And that is why they are given the appellation—'Eight Mothers of Creed'

दृढो खेत्तओ चैव कालओ भावओ तहा ।

जायणा चउव्विहा वुत्ता तं मे कित्तयओ सुण ॥ ४ ॥

दृढओ चवसुत्ता पेहे शुगमित्तं च खेत्तओ ।

कालओ जाव रीपज्जा उवउत्ते य भावओ ॥ ५ ॥

(सं० 24 6-7).

4 & 5 The effort is fourfold viz as regards (1) substance, (2) place, (3) time and (4) condition of mind Listen to me explaining it (in detail).

(1) With regard to substance he (a monk) should look (carefully) with his eyes, (2) with regard to place the space of a yuga (i.e. four hastas or cubits), (3) with regard to time as long as he walks, and (4) with regard to condition of mind : carefully (व्ययुक्क), and with circumspection

Exp Jāyanā—Yatna — Effort

॥४॥ इंदियथे विवज्जित्ता सउद्धारयं चैव पंचहा ।

तम्मुत्ती तप्पुरक्कारे उवउत्ते रियं रिप ॥ ६ ॥

(सं० 24 8).

6 Avoiding all objects of senses, as well as the five-fold methods of daily study (Swādhyāya), completely concentrating on, and with his attention entirely devoted to the task undertaken, that is the way to walk with utmost circumspection (watchfulness)

Exp Even in every day life we exhort people to walk carefully, to observe the traffic rules etc. If a man were to walk absent-mindedly or carelessly, he is bound to stumble on something, or to meet with an accident. Children going to school are also exhorted not to while away their time in loitering and lingering, in case they find something distracting and amusing on the way. Now a monk has got to be far more careful and circumspect than ordinary people. He should not pay any attention to, or should never be distracted, by any of the objects of senses viz sound, colour (form), smell, taste or touch,—whether agreeable or disagreeable. The slightest distraction on his part is likely to cause injury to innumerable living beings which are crawling on the earth.

The five methods of learning everyday lessons are (1) Vācanā recital of the sacred texts; (2) Pṛchānā questioning the teacher; (3) Parāvartanā repetition (of whatever he has learnt); (4) Anuprēkṣā pondering and thinking over again and again on what he has learnt; and (5) Dharmakathā

religious discourse, or stories illustrating religious principles

Now Swādhāya is one of his sacred daily duties. But according to the dictum- 'One thing at a time', he must not pursue his studies while walking, because there is the danger of distraction, which is likely to lead to Himsā, and thus he must avoid at any cost.

कोहे माणे य मायाए ॐ य उवउत्तया ।

हासे भण मोहरिण विकहासु तहेव य ॥ ७ ॥

एयाई अट्ट ठाणाई परिवज्जित्तु संजण ।

असावज्जं मियं काले भासं भासेज्ज पन्नवं ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० 249-10)

7 & 8 Bhāsā-samiti . He (a monk) should be very careful about (i.e. should never give way to) anger, pride, deceit, greed, laughter, fear, loquacity, and slander (or boasting),—avoiding these eight things (faults), a well-disciplined monk should use blameless and concise (measured) speech, and (that too) at the proper time (i.e. only when the occasion requires it)

Exp. When a man talks too much, there is always the possibility of his committing some of the faults mentioned, with limited speech, naturally the chances of committing faults are minimised

गवेसणाए गहणे य परिभोगेसणा य जा ।

आहारोवहिसेज्जाए एए ॐ विसीहए ॥ ९ ॥

9 **Esana-samiti** As regards begging, there are three types of faults which (a monk) should avoid faults (1) in begging, (2) in receiving, and (3) in the use of the three kinds of objects (alms received): viz food, articles of use (requisites), and lodging.

Exp **Esanā-samiti** is divided into three kinds (1) **Gavesana** Search for food, i.e. going on a begging round (2) **Grahanaisanā** Actual receiving of the alms (3) **Paribhogaiṣana** Using or utilisation of alms received A monk must be very careful in all the three

ओहोवहोवग्गहियं भंढरं इविहं सुणी ।

मिण्हतो निक्खियतो वा पउजेज्ज इम विहिं ॥ १० ॥

चक्खुसा पडिलेहिता पमज्जेज्ज जयं जइ ।

आइप निक्खियेज्जा वा इहओ वि समिप सया ॥ ११ ॥

(उ 24 13-14)

10 **Ādāna-nuksepana-samiti** A monk, when taking or laying down the two-fold articles belonging to his general and supplementary outfit (requisites), should use the following procedure —

11 A zealous monk should wipe the things after having (first) carefully inspected them with his eyes, and then (only) he should take them or put them down, being circumspect in both the respects (i.e. with respect to taking or putting them down)

Exp **Oghopadhi** The alms-bowl, broom, etc. comes under this category (General)

Aupagatīlukopadhi—Lodging, bed, cover, etc. come under this division (Supplementary)

संथारं फलनं पीठं निसिज्जं पायकम्बलं ।

अप्पमज्जियमारुहं पावसमणित्तिं वुच्चं ॥ १२ ॥

(३० 177)

12 He, who uses a bed, a wooden plank (board), a seat (stool), or the place for his studies (Nisadyā—a chair) or his duster (Pādakambala — Rajoharana), without having (carefully) wiped these things first, is called a bad monk

Exp Pāyakambala — also explained as Pātrakambala—a cloth to cover alms-bowl.

उच्चार पाम्पवणं रोलं सिंघाणजहियं ।

आहारं उच्चहिं देहं अन्नं वाचिं तहाविहं ॥ १३ ॥

अणावायममलंणं अणावाणं चेव होइ संलोण ।

आवायममलंणं आवाणं चेव संलोण ॥ १४ ॥

अणावायममलंणं परस्सऽणुवघाइण ।

ममे अज्जुत्तिरे वाचिं अचिरकालकयंमिं य ॥ १५ ॥

विनिशणं दूरमंगादे न्नासत्ते विलवज्जिण ।

तयपाणवीयरणिं उच्चारादणिं धोत्तिरे ॥ १६ ॥

and not seen, or frequented and seen. In a place neither frequented nor seen by other people, which is not likely to harm or injure (living beings), which is even, without any holes or crevices, and has been brought into its present condition not long ago, which is spacious, has an inanimate surface layer, not too near (the village etc.), not perforated by holes, and is free from insects and seeds – in such a place he should leave his excrements etc.

Exp It is interesting to note how very detailed rules are given regarding even the every day routine of a monk. Normally these rules come under hygiene and civics, and decency and propriety. What we term as civics and the duties of a good citizen are included here in the Ethics or religious code. This was the practice followed by all the religions in India.

पयाओ पंच समिईओ समासेण विवाहिया ।

इत्तो य तओ गुत्तीओ बोच्छामि अणुपुत्थसो ॥ १७ ॥

(३० 24 19)

17 These five Samtis are thus briefly explained. I shall now explain in due order the three Guptis.

सत्त्वा तदेव मोसा य सत्त्वमोसा तदेव य ।

चउत्थी असत्त्वमोसा य मणशुत्तीओ चउत्थिया ॥ १८ ॥

(३ 24-20)

18 The Manogupti, or 'mind-control' is four-fold (1) Truth, (2) untruth, (3) a mixture of truth and untruth (half-truth), and (4) a mixture of what is not true and what is not untrue.

“ तंमे आरंमे य तदेय य ।

मणं तु नियत्तिज्ज जयं जई ॥ १९ ॥

(उ० 24.11)

19 A zealous monk should turn his mind away from Samrambha—harmful thoughts, Samārambha—harmful mental activities (when about to undertake a bad work), and Ārambha—actual harmful activities.

मणो साहसिओ भीमो इट्ठस्सो परिधावइ ॥ २० ॥

(उ० 23.58)

20 Mind is (like) a rash (impetuous), terrible, bad horse, that runs away (with the rider)

साहरे हत्थपाण य मणं पंचिंदियाणि य ।

‘ च परीणामं भासादोसं च तात्तिं ॥ २१ ॥

(सूत्र० 18.17)

21 He (a monk) should draw in (contract) his hands and feet, his mind and the five organs of sense, he should also check all evil thoughts, and all use of bad language

Exp Cp वरां सहरते चावं कुर्मोऽज्ञानीव सर्वशः ।

इन्द्रियाणीन्द्रियार्थेभ्यस्तस्य प्रहा प्रतिष्ठिता ॥ (अ० 2.58)

सच्चा तदेव मोक्षा य सच्चमोक्षा तदेव य ।

चउत्थी असच्चमोक्षा य वयगुत्ती चउत्तिवहा ॥ २२ ॥

(उ० 24.22)

22 Vāk-gupta or Speech-control is of four kinds : (1) Truth, (2) untruth, (3) mixture of truth and untruth, and (4) a mixture of what is not true and what is not untrue

and not seen, or frequented and seen. In a place neither frequented nor seen by other people, which is not likely to harm or injure (living beings), which is even, without any holes or crevices, and has been brought into its present condition not long ago, which is spacious, has an inanimate surface layer, not too near (the village etc.), not perforated by holes, and is free from insects and seeds – in such a place he should leave his excrements etc.

Exp It is interesting to note how very detailed rules are given regarding even the every day routine of a monk. Normally these rules come under hygiene and civics, and decency and propriety. What we term as civics and the duties of a good citizen are included here in the Ethics or religious code. This was the practice followed by all the religions in India.

पञ्चाओ वैच समिर्हओ समासेण विद्याहिया ।

इसो य तओ गुप्तीओ बोच्छामि अणुपुब्बसो ॥ १७ ॥

(उ. 24-19)

17 These five Samitis are thus briefly explained. I shall now explain in due order the three Guptas.

सच्चा तद्देव मोसा य सच्चमोसा तद्देव य ।

चउत्थी असच्चमोसा य मणगुप्तीओ चउत्थिहा ॥ १८ ॥

(उ. 24-20)

18 The Manogupti, or mind-control is four-fold (1) Truth, (2) untruth, (3) a mixture of truth and untruth (half-truth), and (4) a mixture of what is not true and what is not untrue.

“ तंमे आरंभे य तद्देव य ।

मर्णं तु नियत्तिज्ज जयं जहं ॥ १९ ॥

(उ० 24 21)

19 A zealous monk should turn his mind away from Samrambha—harmful thoughts, Samārambha—harmful mental activities (when about to undertake a bad work), and Ārambha—actual harmful activities.

मणो साहसिओ भीमो दुडुस्सो परिधावइ ॥ २० ॥

(उ० 23 58)

20 Mind is (like) a rash (impetuous), terrible, bad horse, that runs away (with the rider)

साहरे हत्थपाणं य मणं पंचिंदियाणि य ।

‘ च परीणामं भासादोसं च तारिस्सं ॥ २१ ॥

(सूत्र० 18 17)

21. He (a monk) should draw in (contract) his hands and feet, his mind and the five organs of sense, he should also check all evil thoughts, and all use of bad language

Exp Cp यदा सहरते चायं कूमोऽङ्गानीद सर्वदा ।

इन्द्रियाणीन्द्रियार्थेभ्यस्तस्य प्रज्ञा प्रतिष्ठिता ॥ (मग० 2 58)

सच्चवा तद्देव य सच्चमोसा तद्देव य ।

चवत्थी असच्चमोसा य वयसुत्ती चटव्विहा ॥ २२ ॥

(उ० 24 22)

22 Vāk-gupta or Speech-control is of four kinds : (1) Truth, (2) untruth, (3) mixture of truth and untruth, and (4) a mixture of what is not true and what is not untrue

help the soul in thoroughly curbing and controlling all evil and sinful activities

एता पद्ययणमाया जे सम्म आयरे मुणी ।

से सिष्य सव्यस्तारा विष्णुच्छद पैदिष ॥ ३० ॥

(३० 24 27)

30 The monk, who thoroughly (meticulously) observes these (eight) Mothers of Creed (essence of the gospel), the wise one, is quickly freed from the (bonds of) worldly existence

[XVIII]

Samnyama : Self-control

जो सहस्त्रं सहस्रार्ण मासे मासे गवं दप ।

तस्मादि संजमो सौओ अर्दितस्स वि किंचण ॥ १ ॥

(३० १ ४०)

1 A man might give (by way of charity), thousands of thousands (ten lakhs) of cows every month; but far better than him will be the man who may give nothing (in charity), but (only) observes (perfect) self-control

Exp. A rich man, particularly if he has amassed wealth by evil means, is inclined to make munificent charities. The object is to gain name and fame, and there is also the desire to earn a better place in the next world. But this is just trying to bribe God! Far better is the man, who may not give anything by way of charity, but who observes the rules and regulations of self-control

तमाहु लोप पडिबुद्धजीवी ।

सो जीवई संजमजीविण ॥ २ ॥

(दश० बृ० २-१५)

2 He is called in this world a person who is ever alert (watchful), and he leads a life of self-control.

मारत्येहि य सव्वेहिं साहवो संजमुत्तरा ॥ ३ ॥

(उच्च० ५-२०),

help the soul in thoroughly curbing and controlling all evil and sinful activities.

एसा पवयणमाया जे सम्म आयरे मुणी ।

से विष्णु सब्यसंसारा विष्णुमुच्चह पढिष ॥ ३० ॥

(उ० 24 27)

30 The monk, who thoroughly (meticulously) observes these (eight) Mothers of Creed (essence of the gospel), the wise one, is quickly freed from the (bonds of) worldly existence.

[XVIII]

Samnyama : Self-control

जो सहस्सं सहस्साणं मासे मासे गवं दण ।

तस्सावि संजमो सेओ अदितस्स वि किंचण ॥ १ ॥

(उ० १.४०)

1 A man might give (by way of charity), thousands of thousands (ten lakhs) of cows every month; but far better than him will be the man who may give nothing (in charity), but (only) observes (perfect) self-control

Exp. A rich man, particularly if he has amassed wealth by evil means, is inclined to make munificent charities. The object is to gain name and fame; and there is also the desire to earn a better place in the next world. But this is just trying to bribe God! Far better is the man, who may not give anything by way of charity, but who observes the rules and regulations of self-control

तमाहु लोप षड्बुद्धजीवी ।

सो जीवई संजमजीविण ॥ २ ॥

(दश० सू० २.१५)

2 He is called in this world a person who is ever alert (watchful), and he leads a life of self-control.

गारुयेहि य सव्वेहिं साहवो संजमुत्तरा ॥ ३ ॥

3. [There are some householders who are superior to some Bhikṣus (novices)] But the saints (sādhus) are superior to all householders in self-control.

Exp There are some householders who are superior to *some* monks in self-control But these are either novices, or not yet fully-trained The Sādhus are *senior monks* and they are always superior to *all* householders

अणुस्सुओ उरालेसु जयमाणो परिव्वप ।

वरियाप अप्पमत्तो पुट्ठो तत्थऽहियासप ॥ ४ ॥

(B. 1930)

4 Indifferent to all the five pleasures of senses, he should move about (live) exerting himself, and should never be careless in his conduct he should bear (calmly and patiently) whenever he has to suffer (any sufferings).

अणुसोअसुहो लोओ पडिसोओ आसवो सुविहिआण ।

अणुसोओ संसारो पडिसोओ तस्स उत्तारो ॥ ५ ॥

(सं० पृ. 23)

5 Men are (normally) given to drift with the current, and also find pleasure in the same but the goal of the monks is to go against the current. Going with the current means (being attached to) saṁsāra (worldly existence) and going against the current is crossing (getting rid of) the same.

Exp Men are generally 'Pravaha-patita -allowing themselves to drift with the current that is going

with the majority But the monks go against this normal course and so cross the samsāra.

कावोया जा इमा वित्ती केसलोओ य वारुणो ।

दुक्खं वंमज्जयं घोरं धारेउं य महप्पणा ॥ ६ ॥

(उ० 19 33)

6 This life (of monks) is like that of pigeons; painful again is the plucking out of one's hair; the vow of strict celibacy is very hard to observe and difficult to maintain (life-long), even for the great and noble souls

Exp Kāpotā Vṛtti The commentators (and Jacobi) explain this phrase as 'always afraid of dangers' But the expression occurs also in the Mahābhārata, and it should rather mean, 'to live on whatever one may get' Cp Uñchavṛtti: living on the gleanings

वालुयाकवले चैव निरस्ताप उ संजमे ।

असिधारामणं चैव दुक्करं चरिउं तवो ॥ ७ ॥

(उ० 19 37)

7 Self-control is untasteful like (eating) a morsel of sand And to practise (life-long) penance is as difficult as to walk on the edge of a sword.

जहा अग्गिस्सिहा दित्ता पाउं होइ सुदुकरा ।

तहा दुक्करं करेउं जे तारुण्ये समणत्तणं ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० 19 39)

8 Just as it is very difficult (and painful) to swallow a burning flame, similarly monkhood is extremely difficult, (especially) in youth.

जहा दुक्ख भरेउं ज होइ वायस्स कोत्थलो ।
तहा दुक्ख करेउ जे कीवेण समणत्तण ॥ ९ ॥

(३- 19 40)

9 Just as it is very hard (impossible) to fill a bag with wind, so it is extremely difficult for a weak man to lead the life of a monk

जहा भुयार्हि तरिउं दुक्ख रयणायरो ।
तहा अणुवसन्तेण दुक्खं धमसागरो ॥ १० ॥

(३ 19 42)

10 Just as it is very difficult to cross the ocean by swimming (lit with one s arms), so it is extremely difficult for one, who is not pacified, (to cross) the ocean of self control

इह लोप निप्पिवासस्स नत्थि किंचि वि दुक्करं ॥ ११ ॥

(३- 19-44)

11. In this world nothing is (really) difficult for one who is free from desires (craving)

जया य चयर्हं धम्मं अणज्जो भोगकारणा ।
से तत्थ मुच्छिणं घाले आयइ नावबुद्धार्हं ॥ १२ ॥

(४- १ 11)

12. When an ignoble person forsakes (the path of) religion only for the sake of pleasures, then that ignorant fool, addicted to pleasures, never realises his fate, (he never bothers to consider the future consequences of his folly).

[XIX]

Vinaya : Discipline or Service of Preceptors

मूलाओ लंघणमयो दुमस्त खंघाउ पच्छा समुवेन्ति साहा ।

साहस्यसाहा विवहन्ति पत्ता तओ सि पुप्फं च फलं रसो थ ॥ १ ॥

एवं धम्मस्त विणओ मूलं परमो से मोक्खो ।

जेण किंति सुवं सिग्घं निस्सेसं व्वासिगच्छइ ॥ २ ॥

(दस० १॥ १-२)

1 & 2 From the roots grows the trunk of a tree; from the trunk shoot up the branches (and twigs); from them spring forth the leaves and foliage, and from them blossom forth the flowers, fruit and the juice Similarly, Vinaya- Discipline (obedience)-is the root of (the tree of) religion, and its highest (ultimate) result (or juice or fruit) is liberation. It is by means of this Vinaya (obedience or discipline), that one achieves quickly fame, knowledge (of scriptures), and also the final welfare

अहा छईं समुत्ता पडिआ न विणस्सइ ।

तहा जीवे समुत्ते संसारे न विणस्सइ ॥ ३ ॥

(द० २१ ५९)

3 Just as a needle with thread (attached), does not get lost even when fallen (on the ground), similarly the soul, with knowledge of scriptures, will not get lost (when fallen) in this worldly existence

Exp. There is a pun on the word ' Sasutta ' It means (1) with a thread (Sasūtra), and (2) endowed with the knowledge of Sūtras or Scriptures.

अहादिअग्नी जलणं नमसे नाणाहुर्मतपयामिसित्तं ।

एवायरियं उवचिद्वएज्जा अणतनाणोवगओ वि सतो ॥ ४ ॥

(दश० 9 : 11)

4 Just as a fire worshipper bows down to fire, served with various oblations and (to the accompaniment of) Vedic hymns, similarly a monk, although possessed of infinite knowledge should, nevertheless, wait upon his preceptor

Exp Honour and worship of the preceptor (Guru) is the first step and a very essential factor in the spiritual life of a disciple Even after having achieved eminence and high spiritual progress, he must always be grateful to, and revere the preceptor, who taught and guided him in the initial stages

थंमा घ कोहा य मयप्यमाया शुद्धस्सगासे विणय न सिङ्गत्ति ।

सो चेव ऊ तस्स अमूहभावो फलं व कीयस्स बहाय होइ ॥११॥

(दश 9 : 1)

5 When a monk does not care to learn discipline -(refuses to be instructed in discipline)- out of conceit (pride), anger, vanity, and carelessness, that itself -(i.e. his refusal to be instructed)- constitutes his spiritual poverty (or wretchedness), which (eventually) leads to his own ruin like the fruit of a Bamboo tree

Exp The Bamboo tree bears fruit once in hundred years and then the tree dies (withers)

विणयं पि जो उवापण षोइओ कुप्पई नरो ।

विश्यं सो सिरिमेज्जतिं दण्डेण पडिसेइए ॥ ६ ॥

(दश० 9 ii-4)

6. A monk, who gets angry when he is being urged with every (gentle) means to acquire learning (discipline), (verily) drives away with a stick, heavenly glory coming to him (of her own accord).

जे आयरियउवज्झायणं सुत्तुसावयणंकरा ।

तेसिं सिक्खा पवहुंति जलसिन्ता इव पायवा ॥ ७ ॥

(दश० १ ॥ १२)

7 Those who serve, wait upon, and obey the (words of) their preceptors and teachers, their knowledge (instruction) grows like trees well-sprinkled with water

Exp Śikṣā is of two types — (1) Grahana śikṣā—theoretical knowledge (of scriptures etc).

(2) Āsevanā – Practical knowledge

आणानिद्वेसकरे गुरुणमुचवायकारण ।

इंगियामारसंपन्ने से विणीयंति बुद्धई ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० १२)

8 He is called a well-disciplined monk, who (promptly) obeys the orders and commands of his teacher, walks up to him (immediately when ordered), and can read the thoughts and expressions of his teacher

Exp Ingita minute expressions on the face Ākāra movements and actions

विचत्ती अविणीयस्स संपत्ती विणियस्स य ।

जस्सेयं दुहओ नार्यं सिक्खं से अभिगच्छइ ॥ ९ ॥

(दश० १ ॥ २२)

अहाहिअर्गी जलण नमसे ५२ ॐ ॐ ।
 एवायरिय उवचिट्टपज्जा अणतनाजोवगओ वि संतो ॥ ४ ॥
 (इश. ९ : ११)

4 Just as a fire worshipper bows down to fire, served with various oblations and (to the accompaniment of) Vedic hymns, similarly a monk, although possessed of infinite knowledge should, nevertheless, wait upon his preceptor

Exp Honour and worship of the preceptor (Guru) is the first step and a very essential factor in the spiritual life of a disciple Even after having achieved eminence and high spiritual progress he must always be grateful to, and revere the preceptor, who taught and guided him in the initial stages

येमा य कोहा य मयप्पमाया गुरुस्तगासे विणयं न सिक्खे ।
 सो खेव ऊ तस्स अभूमावो फलं य कीयस्स बहाय होइ ॥ ५ ॥
 (इश. ९ : १)

5 When a monk does not care to learn discipline —(refuses to be instructed in discipline)— out of conceit (pride) anger, vanity, and carelessness, that itself —(i.e. his refusal to be instructed)— constitutes his spiritual poverty (or wretchedness), which (eventually) leads to his own ruin like the fruit of a Bamboo tree.

Exp The Bamboo tree bears fruit once in hundred years and then the tree dies (withers)

विणयं पि ओ उवापण थोइओ कुप्पई मरो ।
 विज्जं सो सिरिमेअर्ति वण्ढेण पविसेहए ॥ ६ ॥
 (इश. ९ : ४)

6. A monk, who gets angry when he is being urged with every (gentle) means to acquire learning (discipline), (verily) drives away with a stick, heavenly glory coming to him (of her own accord).

जे आयरियउवज्झायाणं सुस्सुसावयणंकरा ।

तेसिं सिक्खा पवहुंति जलसित्ता इव पायवा ॥ ७ ॥

(दश० १ ॥ १२)

7. Those who serve, wait upon, and obey the (words of) their preceptors and teachers, their knowledge (instruction) grows like trees well-sprinkled with water

Exp Śikṣā is of two types — (1) Grahana śikṣā—theoretical knowledge (of scriptures etc).
(2) Āsevanā ~ Practical knowledge

आणानिद्वेसकरे गुरुणमुवचायकारण ।

ईगियागारसंपत्ते से विणीय त्ति बुद्धई ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० १.२)

8 He is called a well-disciplined monk, who (promptly) obeys the orders and commands of his teacher, walks up to him (immediately when ordered), and can read the thoughts and expressions of his teacher,

Exp Ingita minute expressions on the face
Ākāra movements and actions

विवत्ती अविणीयस्स संपत्ती विणियस्स य ।

जस्सेयं बुद्धओ नायं सिक्खं से असिगच्छइ ॥ ९ ॥

9 An undisciplined (disciple) suffers loss, (in that he never learns anything), while a well-disciplined (monk) stands to gain (everything) He who knows both these (alternatives) masters discipline (knowledge)

अहं पचहिं ठाणेहिं जेहिं सिक्खा न लम्भई ।

थम्मा कोहा यमाएण रोगेणालस्सएण य ॥ १० ॥

(४ 113)

10 There are five causes by which (wholesome) discipline cannot be mastered (1) Vanity (insolence), (2) anger, (3) carelessness, (4) disease, and (5) idleness

Exp These five faults are a stumbling block in the process of learning. These are the disqualifications of a disciple

अहं अट्ठहिं ठाणेहिं सिक्खासीले त्ति दुच्चर्चई ।

अहस्सिरे सया दन्ते न य मम्मसुवाहरे ॥ ११ ॥

नासीले न विंसीले वि न सिया अइलोलुप ।

अकोहणे सच्चरणे सिक्खासीले त्ति दुच्चर्चई ॥ १२ ॥

(३ 114-5)

11 & 12. For eight causes (mentioned below), he is called a well-behaved pupil (fit to receive instructions) —

(1) Not given to laughter and merriment (not fond of mirth)

(2) Always controlled

- (3) Never pointing out the weak points of others;
(not given to talking evil of others)
(4) Not undisciplined i e strong in character.
(5) Not being of bad discipline
(6) Not being greedy
(7) Calm and quiet (not ill-tempered)
(8) Truth-loving

वित्ते अचोदय निच्चं खिप्पं हवइ सुचोदय ।

अहोवद्वं सुकयं किच्चवइं कुववइं सया ॥ १३ ॥

(उ० 144)

13 A good pupil is always well-behaved even when not expressly directed or goaded, (or a good pupil needs no express directions), and he is quickly directed, (i e he needs few directions), he always carries out his duties well (to the satisfaction of his teachers), and always according to instructions

Exp A good pupil does not require constant chiding and admonition, he also does not require a 'supervisor' And in case he is guided or instructed on occasions, he follows the instructions in letter as well as in spirit

न मास्सेज्जा णेव वंसेज्जा ।

माद्व्हाणं विवज्जेज्जा अणुचिन्तिय वियागरे ॥ १४ ॥

(सू० I. 925)

14 He (a good pupil) should not talk while being spoken to (i e should not interrupt), nor should he take delight in (gloat over) the foibles and weak

points of others, he should avoid deceitful speech, and should speak (answer) only after due deliberation

निसन्ते सिया अमुहरी बुद्धाणे अग्निप सया ।

अद्वजुसाणि सिक्खिज्जा निरुद्धाणि उ यज्जप ॥ १५ ॥

(उ 18)

15 He (a good pupil) should always be meek (and mild), and not be garrulous he should acquire valuable knowledge (spiritual knowledge) by remaining always in the company of the enlightened ones, and should avoid worthless talk

Exp He should always remain in the company of the wise, and should strive to gain more and more knowledge and enlightenment.

मा गलियस्सेव कसे यमगमिच्छे पुणो पुणो ।

कसे व द्दुमाग्णे पादग परिवज्जप ॥ १६ ॥

(उ 112)

16 He (a good pupil) should not expect to be instructed again and again (i.e. he should not wait for instructions at every step), like a bad (unbroken) horse (waiting) for the whip (of the rider) he should avoid sinful actions at a mere glance from the teacher, like a noble (thorough-bred) steed, merely at the sight of a whip

Exp A bad horse needs constant whipping. But a noble horse can almost read the mind of the rider. Similarly a bad pupil needs constant goading, but a good pupil knows the mind and thoughts of his preceptor as in a mirror

or does not exist. You may plead to recognise it as such. But I am admitting what is mysterious to me, although I know it not. Had I known it, it would have no more been a mystery. We know that the past and the future and so also the present, to a very great extent, are so indistinct to us that we can only form our opinions about them. My belief, therefore, is that our extant personality is neither wholly material nor exclusively immaterial. If we should regard it as wholly material it cannot be conscious. Should we take it to be wholly immaterial, it cannot have contraction and expansion (vide question No. 4), bright, colourful experience (vide question No. 5), elevated majesty (vide question No. 7), and attachment etc (vide question No. 10).

So far as I understand no living being is non-material, as some scholars have rightly ascribed the qualities of contraction, expansion, bondage etc to it. Non-materiality is its consummation devoutly to be wished for but unattainable so long as a creature lives. This is also not the subject of our enquiry. So far as our firsthand experience is concerned, both the past and the future of the self are shrouded in mystery. The writer wants to say that the known present is matter endowed with consciousness. I want to say that it is consciousness mixed with matter. Matter and consciousness both are in both. The questioner wants to regard consciousness as secondary and matter as primary. Having reached this point our distance is limited to mere primacy and secondariness. But can the consciousness which is a potent means for the body to accept other matters; to own, absorb and renounce it and which is regarded by living beings as paramount in all activities, itself be regarded as mere subsidiary?



नापुट्रो वागरे किंचि पुट्रो वा नालियं वए ।

कोहं असच्चं कुत्वेज्जा धारेज्जा पियमप्पियं ॥ १७ ॥

(व० 114)

17 He (a good pupil) should not speak (reply) unasked, and when asked, he should never tell a lie; he should not give way to anger (he should suppress anger), and bear (with indifference) pleasant and unpleasant happenings

न पक्खओ न पुरओ नेव किच्चाण पिट्ठओ ।

न तुंजे ऊरुणा ऊरुं सयणे नो पडिस्सुणे ॥ १८ ॥

(व० 1-18)

18 He (a good pupil) should not sit by the side of the teacher, nor (right) in front of him, nor behind him, he should also not sit (too near him), touching his thighs, and should not reply to the preceptor while (seated or lying down) on the bed.

Exp. These are all rules of proper behaviour and decorum Unless this discipline is ingrained in the students right from early childhood, it is very difficult to expect them to be well-behaved later on

हत्यं पायं च कायं च पणिद्दाय जिहंदिप ।

अहीणमुत्तो निसिप सगासे गुरुणो सुणी ॥ १९ ॥

(व० 8 45)

19 A monk should sit in the presence of his teacher, with his hands and feet and the whole body in proper position (i e in a proper posture), and with all his senses in proper control (i e withdrawn from any distracting activities)

आयरिपिहि वाहितो वुसिणीओ न कयाइ वि ।

पसायेही निशगट्टी उवचिट्ठे शुव सया ॥ २० ॥

(अ 120)

20 When called by the preceptors, he (a good pupil) should never remain silent, but always desiring the favour and grace (of teachers), and keen on attaining liberation (Niyāga), should always approach his preceptor with deference and humility

आलयेते लउते वा न निसीएज्ज कयाइ वि ।

चइकणमासणे धीरो जओ जत्त पविस्सुणे ॥ २१ ॥

(उ 121)

21 Whether he is talking little or much to the teacher he (a good pupil) should never remain seated an intelligent pupil should always (first) leave his seat and (then) answer (the preceptor) modestly and attentively

आसणगओ न पुच्छेज्जा नेव सेज्जागओ कया ।

आगम्मुक्कुडुओ संतो पुच्छेज्जा पंजलीउव्वे ॥ २२ ॥

(उ० 122)

22. He (a good pupil) should never ask any questions while being seated on a seat or on bed, but approaching (the teacher), and sitting on his haunches (squatting), and with his hands folded, he should ask his questions (politely)

अं मे बुद्धाणुसासन्ति सीपण फरसेण वा ।

मम लामो त्ति पेहाप पयओ तं पविस्सुणे ॥ २३ ॥

(उ 127)

23. He (a good pupil) should listen devotedly, (and receive the instructions) thinking that it is for his own (ultimate) good (benefit), whatever instructions the enlightened ones (preceptors) are pleased to give him, whether couched in tender or harsh terms

Exp Sometimes a teacher has a tender way and sometimes a very harsh manner. But in either case, the pupil must take it always in a spirit of humility, always bearing in mind that it is for his own good

अणुसासणमोवायं दुक्कडस्स य चोयणं ।

द्वियं तं मण्णइ पण्णो वेत्तं होइ असाहुणो ॥ २४ ॥

(उ० 1 28)

24 (The teacher's) instructions, the manner in which they are given, and his admonitions (severe rebukes) for sinful deeds (mistakes),—all these a good (intelligent) pupil regards as beneficial, but a bad monk (pupil) hates (resents) them

न कोवप आयरियं अप्पाणं पि न कोवप ।

बुद्धोवघाई न सिया न सिया तोत्तगवेसण ॥ २५ ॥

(उ० 1 40)

25 He (a good pupil) should never infuriate (provoke) his preceptors, nor should he (ever) lose his temper, he should never offend or insult the enlightened ones (teachers), nor should he irritate them by (covert or overt) allusions to their defects (or drawbacks).

Exp Tottagavesae Totta-Totra. (1) A goad. Then it would mean —He should never seek goading

i.e. rebukes and admonition, or (2) Marman or Chidra—weak point, mannerisms, or physical defects

आयरियं कुवियं नञ्चा पत्तिण्ण पसायप ।

विज्झयेज्ज पजलीउडो वपज्ज न पुणुत्ति य ॥ २६ ॥

(उ० 1-41)

26 Knowing the teacher to be angry, he (a good pupil) should pacify him with sweet and gentle words, appease him with folded hands and should (solemnly) promise not to repeat (the mistake) again

जे य चंढे मिप थद्धे दुव्वार्ह नियडी सद्धे ।

वुज्झार्ह से अविणीअप्पा कट्ठं सोअगयं जहा ॥ २७ ॥

(इ० 9 ॥ 3)

27 That undisciplined (ill-behaved) pupil, who is ill-tempered, ignorant, puffed up with pride, having a bitter (scathing) tongue, deceitful, and wily (roguish) he drifts, or is carried away (in this samsāra), like a log of wood caught in a strong current.

स वैद्यगन्धर्वमणुस्सपूइप चश्च वेहं मलयकपुट्ययं ।

सिद्धे वा हवइ सासप देवे वा अप्यरप महिहिप ॥ २८ ॥

(उ 1 48)

28 He (a good pupil) is worshipped by celestial beings Gandharvas, and human beings on leaving this body, which is full of dirt and impurities, he becomes either an illustrious god with only few impurities (Kārmic-dust or bonds), or becomes an eternal and perfected (liberated) soul

Kuśīśya A Bad Disciple

खलुंका जारिता जोज्जा दुस्सीसा वि हु तारिता ।

जोइया धम्मजाणम्मि भज्जन्ति धिइदुब्बला ॥ १ ॥

(उ० 278)

1 Like bad bullocks yoked to a carriage (which are a nuisance and trouble), bad pupils also are like that (a source of trouble to their teacher), when yoked to the car of religion, they break down through lack of fortitude (zeal)

इद्धीमारविण एणे एणेऽथ रसगारवे ।

सायागारविण एणे एणे सुचिरकोहणे ॥ २ ॥

(उ० 279)

2 Some are proud of their success or prosperity, some of their food, some of the pleasures (they enjoy), while some carry their anger over a long period ('nurse their anger')

Exp A monk who is proud of his band of disciples and devotees is termed as *Raddhigārava*, similarly if he is proud of getting choice alms, then he is called *Rasagārava*. And if a monk is proud of the happiness that he derives from his state of monkhood, then he is called *Sāyāgārava*. The word *Gārava* can be derived either from *Garva* or *Gaurava*. A monk must not be proud of *anything*, even his

monkhood Humility should be his motto and watchword

मिक्खालसिण एणे एणे ओमाणमीदण ।

थद्धे एणेऽणुसासम्मी हेऊहिं कारणेहि य ॥ ३ ॥

(उ 27 10)

3 Some are lethargic in (averse to) begging some are afraid of insults (they may have to put up from householders while on begging round) some are vain (stuck up) " how can I convince them by reasons and arguments ?—(this is the dilemma of their teachers)

सो वि अंतरभासिहो दोसमेव पकुब्बई ।

आयरियाणं तु वयणं पडिक्खेहऽमिक्खण ॥ ४ ॥

(उ 27 11)

4 He (a bad pupil) is also given to interrupting (his teachers), and always finds faults (with others or teachers) He also always (invariably) acts in contravention to the instructions of his teachers.

जारिस्ता मम सीसा उ तारिस्ता गलिगइहा ।

गलिगइहे अहित्तानं ददं पणिण्हं तव ॥ ५ ॥

(उ 27 16)

5 " These (bad) pupils of mine are very much like bad donkeys So abandoning these lazy donkeys he practises severe austerities.

रमण पंडिण सासं ह्यं भइं व वाहण ।

बालं सम्मइ सासन्तो गलियस्सं व वाहण ॥ ६ ॥

(उ० 137)

6 He (a teacher) takes delight in instructing an intelligent (pupil), like a rider (in riding) a noble horse, but he is tired of (gets fed up with) instructing a bad (pupil), like a rider on an unbroken (wicked) horse

[XXI]

Dussila An Ill-mannered Monk

जहा सुणी पूहकणी निकसिज्जइ सव्वसो ।
एवं दुस्सीलपढिणीए सुहरी निकसिज्जई ॥ १ ॥
(उ १४)

1 As a bitch with sore (and putrid) ears is driven away from everywhere, similarly a bad, insubordinate (perverse) and garrulous (pupil) is turned out (from every Gurukula)

कणकुबगं चइत्ताणं विट्ठं भुंजइ सूयरे ।
एवं सील चइत्ताणं दुस्सीले रमई मिए ॥ २ ॥
(उ १५)

2. A pig leaves a trough filled with corn, and feeds on faeces, similarly an ignorant man forsakes virtue, and takes to evil ways

सुणिया भायं साणस्स सूयरस्स नरस्स य ।
विणए ठविज्ज अप्पाण इच्छंता हियमप्पणी ॥ ३ ॥
(उ १६)

3 Hearing a man of bad conduct) thus being compared to a dog and a pig, one who is keen on his welfare should establish himself firmly in discipline (or good conduct)

धम्मजिजयं च ववहारं बुद्धेहायरियं सया ।
तमायरंतो ववहारं गरहं नामिगच्छइ ॥ ४ ॥
(उ १४२)

4 One, who pursues a course of conduct conforming to religion (Law), which has been practised by the enlightened ones (preceptors), will never incur blame

Exp Conduct which has the sanction of religious precepts, and which is also pursued by his superiors, is a safe course for him बुद्धेदायरिय = बुद्धेहि आयरिय ।

अमणुक्कसमुप्पायं दुक्खमेव विजाणिया ।

समुप्पायमजाणंता कहं नायंति संवरं ॥ ५ ॥

(सू० I 310)

5 Know (realise) that misery arises from (one's own) evil deeds How can those, who are ignorant of the origin (of misery), know (the means of) its prevention ?

Kāma-bhoga Pleasures and Enjoyments

अणागयमपस्सता पच्चुप्पन्नगवेसगा ।

ते पच्छा परितप्पन्ति स्त्रीणे आउम्मि जोव्वणे ॥ १ ॥

(सू I 3414)

1 Those who do not (fore-) see the future (do not care for future), but are only out to seek (enjoy) the present, will repent later on (come to grief later on), when their life (-span) or youth comes to an end

जे केअ सरीरे सत्ता वण्णे कूवे य सव्वसो ।

मणसा कावचक्केणं सय्वे ते दुक्खसमवा ॥ २ ॥

(उ० 611)

2 All those will (only) reap misery, who in thought, words or deeds are attached to their bodies, to colours and to forms

जे इह सायाणुगा नरा अज्झोववणा कामेहिं मुच्छिन्त्या ।

किव्वणेण सम पगब्धिमा न वि जाणंति समाहिमाहितां ॥ ३ ॥

(सू I 234)

3 Those who are given (only) to seek pleasures in this world and are greedy and absorbed in sensual enjoyments, are reckless like the wretched they do not know that meditation has been laid down (as a panacea for all evils in the world by the Enlightened Ones)

उबलेचो होइ भोगेसु अभोगी नोचलिप्पई ।

भोगी भमई संसारे अभोगी विप्पमुच्चई ॥ ४ ॥

(३० 25 41)

4 There is stickiness (the quaalty of adhesion) in pleasures, one who is not given to pleasures, is never stuck up (or soiled), a man given to pleasures wanders about in samsāra, one who renounces pleasures is freed from it (samsāra)

उल्लो सुक्को थ दो छूदा गोलया मट्टियामया ।

दो वि अ कुट्टे जो उल्लो सोऽत्थ लगई ॥ ५ ॥

एवं लगंति दुस्मेहा जे नरा का ।

विरत्ता उ न लगंति जहा से सुक्कगोलय ॥ ६ ॥

(३० 25 42-43)

5 & 6 If two clods of clay, one wet and the other dry, are flung against a wall, both of them dashing against it, the wet one will stick there, (but the dry one will not) Similarly, the evil-minded (foolish) men, who love pleasures, cling (to karman), but those who are not attached to pleasures do not cling (to karman), like the dry clod of clay.

हत्यागया इमे कामा कालिया जे अणागया ।

को जाणइ परे लोए अत्थि वा नत्थि वा पुणो ॥ ७ ॥

जणेण सद्धि होक्खामि इइ वाले पगव्वई ।

कामभोगाणुरापणं केसे संपडिवज्जई ॥ ८ ॥

(३० 5-6-7)

7 & 8. (The foolish and ignorant reason thus) — “These (worldly) pleasures are (as it were), in our hand; but those of the future (or belonging to the

other world) are uncertain, (as regards to the time when they will be enjoyed) moreover who knows (for certain) whether there is (exists) a next world or not ? The fool boasts (talks impudently), ' I shall be with (the majority of) men, but by his love for pleasures and enjoyments he (merely) suffers pain (in the end)

Exp Kalika—Uncertain doubtful

This is the usual argument advanced by majority of people who are the followers of Carvaka According to them, a bird in the hand is worth two in the bush ' Moreover, they further argue, if after all we have to sacrifice pleasures here, for the sake of pleasures in the next world, then why not do it the other way round ? Because nobody has actually seen the other world, and for all we know, it may be merely a fiction or a fabrication of the imagination of some (rogues), who are jealous of us because we are leading a happy-go-lucky life And how can so many people be in the wrong ? This is how they try to beguile themselves and others, but then they do not quite realise the danger ahead, and the pitfalls of the primrose path

तत्रो पुटो आर्यकेगं मिलाजो परितप्पई ।

पमीओ परलोगस्स कम्मणुमेहि अप्पजो ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 511)

9 And (later on) after he is attacked by diseases, and is an invalid (infirm) he then suffers and being

afraid of the next world, he then repents for (or ponders over) his own sinful actions of the past

सल्लं कामा विसें कामा कामा आसीविसोपमा ।

कामे य पथेभाणा अकामा जन्ति दोग्गइ ॥ १० ॥

(८० 9 53)

10 (Worldly) pleasures are like a thorn that rankles, they are poison, and are like a venomous snake, those that hanker after pleasures, never get them, but (only) go to bad existence after death, without getting the pleasures (they seek)

खणमेत्तसोक्खा बहुकालदुक्खा पगामदुक्खा अणिगामसोक्खा ।

संसारमोक्खरुस विपक्खभूया खाणी अणत्थाण उ कामभोगा ॥ ११ ॥

(८० 14 13)

11 (Worldly) pleasures and enjoyments give only momentary satisfaction, but bring (in their wake) suffering for a long time, they give little happiness, but cause (give) intense sorrow, they are the enemies (opponents) of liberation from worldly existence, and are a very mine of evils

Exp A man who opts for pleasures is not a prudent man, because for the sake of these momentary pleasures, he stakes his permanent happiness

- जहा किंपागफलाणं परि न सुंदरो ।

एवं भुत्ताण भोगाणं परिणामो न सुंदरो ॥ १२ ॥

(३० 19 17)

12 As the effect of (eating a) kimpāka fruit is never good, so the effect of pleasures enjoyed is anything but good (can never be good)

Exp This is a very common simile A kimpāka fruit has a very beautiful and attractive external, but it is a poisonous fruit Kimpaka - Trichosanthes Palmata or Cucumis Colocynthes

सद्य विहविषं गीषं सद्य नहु विहविषं ।

सद्ये आभरणा भारा सद्ये कामा दुहावहा ॥ १३ ॥

(उ० 13-16)

13 All music is but prattle (empty sounds), all dancing is but mocking (and mimicry) all ornaments are but a burden, (and) all pleasures bring (nothing but) only misery (and sorrow)

अचवेह कालो तुरन्ति राहो न यावि भोगा पुरिसाण निच्चा ।

अविच्च भोगा पुरिसं अयन्ति इम जहा खीणफलं व पक्खी ॥ १४ ॥

(उ 13-31)

14. Time rolls (marches) on and the days (lit. nights) hasten on quickly human (mortal) pleasures are not permanent (or everlasting) they come to a man, but (immediately) forsake him, just as birds abandon a tree without fruit (whose fruits are exhausted)

Exp One of the finest specimens of Ascetic poetry Uttarādhyayana-Sūtra contains many such delightful ditties

पुरिसोरम पावकम्मुणा पलियन्तं मणुयाण जीवियं ।

सन्ना इह काममुच्छिषा गोह जन्ति नरा असज्जहा ॥ १५ ॥

(सू० 12-110)

15 Man, refrain from sms! Human life is short (and bound to come to an end) Men, who are

drowned (in lust and greed etc), who are addicted to pleasures, and lack self-control (do not guard themselves against sin), get deluded (are enveloped in delusion)

Exp Moha—delusion or infatuation is the worst enemy of the soul. Unless the Mohaniya karman is destroyed, no spiritual progress is possible.

अदुर्वं जीवितं नन्वा सिद्धिमर्गं वियाणिया ।

विनिग्रहेज्ज भोगेसु आउं परिमिअमप्पणो ॥ १६ ॥

(दश० ८३४)

16 Knowing that (this) life is (after all) uncertain (not permanent), and having known (seen) the path leading to liberation, one should abstain from pleasures, one's life is, after all, limited

संबुजझह । किं न बुजझह ? संबोही खलु पेच्च इल्लहा ।

नो हवणमन्ति राहओ नो सुलसं पुणरावि जीवितं ॥ १७ ॥

(सू० 12.11)

17 Awake ! (Oh men !) Why are you not realising, (or awaking from slumber and getting wide awake) ? Enlightenment is very difficult to obtain after death (in the next world) The days (lit nights) never return, nor is it very easy to obtain human life again (for a second time)

Exp. This is a Gāthā in a very noble and elevated strain The advice is straight from the heart and also reaches the heart

इह जीवियमेव पासहा तवणे वाससयस्स तुव्हइ ।

इत्तरवासे य बुज्झइ गिद्धनरा कामेसु मुच्छिज्या ॥ १८ ॥

(सू. I 238)

18 See (consider, for instance), this very life It is snapped either in (the prime of) youth, or (at best) after a hundred years But bear well in mind (realise this well), that (in either case) it is but of short duration (And yet) the greedy are addicted to pleasures (crave after pleasures)

Exp Hundred years is regarded as a full span of human life. But it is nothing compared to the span of life of celestial beings, which is crores and crores of years

वाहेण जहा व विच्छुण्ण अवले होइ गव पचोइए ।

से अन्नसो अप्पयामए नाववहे अवले विसीयइ ॥ १९ ॥

एव कामेसणं विज्ज अज्ज सुए पयहेज्ज संययं ।

कामी कामे ण कामए लद्धे वा वि अलद्ध कण्णुइ ॥ २० ॥

(सू. I 235 6)

19 & 20 As a bullock which is hurt (by goading), and is still urged on by the driver, becomes weak, and at last without any stamina left and unable to move (or carry the load) with its strength all lost, sinks down (collapses) know (realise) that hankering after pleasures is also similar (i.e. a man running after pleasures rarely gets them, but is bound to collapse in the long run) sooner or later (lit to-day or to-morrow), he will have to give up enjoyments

(or pursuit of pleasures, for sheer lack of stamina to run after them) (Realising this), one who is desirous of (or loves) pleasures (and enjoyments), should not crave after them, whether he has obtained them or not

Exp Man clings to the pleasures he has obtained and runs after those which he does not possess Both ways there is the 'craving' 'बाह' could also mean व्याध - a hunter, and गव - पशु - (the hunted) animal

कामाणुगिद्विष्यभवं खु दुःखं सब्यस्स लोगस्स सदेवगस्स ।

जं काइयं माणसियं च किंचि तस्सऽन्तमं गच्छइ वीयरगो ॥२१॥

(३० 32 19)

21 From greed (lust) for pleasures, arises the misery of the whole world - including the world of celestial beings Only the Vitarāga (one who is free from passions), puts an end to misery, whether it is physical or mental

कामकामी खलु अयं पुरिसे, से सोयइ, जूरइ, तिप्पइ, परितिप्पइ ॥२२॥

(भावा० I 25)

22 That man, certainly, who loves pleasures, is afflicted (by their loss), feels sorry, laments (and bewails), and is tortured

Exp A man who loves pleasures, suffers tortures when he is deprived of them

खुवेसु जो गिद्धिसुवेइ तिब्बं अकालियं पावइ से विणासं ।

रागावरे से जइ वा पयंमे आलीयलीले समुवेइ मच्चुं ॥ २३ ॥

(३० 32 21)

23 He, who is passionately and exceedingly fond of (charming and attractive) ' forms (colours), comes to untimely (premature) ruin, just as a passionate moth, attracted by light, embraces death

Exp A moth is attracted by the flame of fire (form or colour), and is destroyed in the process.

रूवे विरक्तो मणुओ विसोगो पपण दुक्खोहपरंपरेण ।

न लिप्पई मयमज्जे वि सन्तो जलेण वा पुक्खरिणीपलास ॥२४॥

(व = 32 34)

24 (But) a man, who is indifferent (not attached) to forms (and colours), is free from (all) sorrows he is not affected (tainted) by the continuous series (succession) of sorrows, though still living in this saṃsāra like a lotus-leaf (which is not tainted or moistened) by water (though growing and remaining in water)

Exp. The simile of the ' Lotus-leaf ' is a very common simile in all philosophical literature of the Hindus, Jains and Buddhists

सदेसु जो गिद्धिमुवेह तिद्व अकालिअ पायइ से यिणासं ।

रमाउरे हरिणमिप व्व मुद्धे सदे अतिसे समुवेह मच्चु ॥२५॥

(व = 32 37)

25 He who is exceedingly and passionately fond of (sweet) sounds, comes to untimely ruin, just as an innocent (simple-hearted) deer, distressed by its passion (for sounds), embraces death being never completely satisfied with sounds (i.e. always going in for new and tempting sounds)

गंधेसु जो गिद्धिसुवेह तिद्धं अकालिअं पावइ से विणासं ।
 रागाउरे ओसहिगंधगिद्धे सप्ये बिलाओ विव निक्खमंते ॥ २६ ॥
 (उ० 32 50)

26 He, who is exceedingly and passionately fond of (sweet) smells, comes to untimely ruin, just as a snake, distressed by its passion and greed for the (sweet) smell of plants and herbs, rushes out of its hole (and is then killed)

रसेसु जो गिद्धिसुवेह तिद्धं अकालियं पावइ से विणासं ।
 रागाउरे षडिसविभिन्नकाय मच्छे जहा आमिसभोगगिद्धे ॥ २७ ॥
 (उ० 32 63)

27 He, who is exceedingly and passionately fond of (sweet) tastes, comes to untimely ruin, just as a fish, greedy for the enjoyment of flesh (eager to swallow the bait), has its body impaled by a hook

जो गिद्धिसुवेह तिद्धं अकालिअं पावइ से विणासं ।
 रागाउरे सीयजलावस्तन्ने गाहगहीप महिसे व रण्णे ॥ २८ ॥
 (उ० 32 76)

28 He, who is passionately and exceedingly fond of (pleasant or agreeable) touch, comes to untimely ruin, like a buffalo in the forest, which is distressed (torn) by its passion (for agreeable touch), plunges in (a pool of) cold water, and is caught (and devoured) by a crocodile

भावेसु जो गिद्धिसुवेह तिद्धं अकालियं पावइ से विणासं ।
 रागाउरे कामगुणेसु गिद्धे करेणुमगावहिण मजे वा ॥ २९ ॥
 (उ० 32 89)

29 He, who is passionately and exceedingly fond of ' feelings (passions—भावs) comes to untimely ruin, like an elephant, who is torn (distressed) by passions, is greedy for carnal pleasures and enjoyments, and is lured away from its path by a cow-elephant (and is then captured and killed)

पविन्दियत्या य मणस्त अत्या दुक्खस्स हेउ मणुयस्स राणिणो ।
ते थेव थोव पि कयाइ दुक्ख न यीयरागस्स करेन्ति किंचि ॥ ३० ॥
(उ 32 100)

30 Thus, the objects of the senses and the mind are a source of sorrow and pain to men, who are swayed away by passions but they do not cause any pain whatsoever, nor affect in the least, one who is free from all passions (Vitaraga)

न कामभोगा समय उवेन्ति न यावि भोगा विगइ उवेन्ति ।
जे तप्पओसी य परिग्गही य सो तेसु मोहा विगइ उवेइ ॥ ३१ ॥
(उ० 32-101)

31 (Objects of) pleasures and enjoyments (by themselves) do not cause indifference, nor do they arouse emotions (passions) such as anger, hatred etc but he, who either hates them or loves them, is swayed away by emotions (and passions) because of his infatuation (or hatred) for them

Exp Things in themselves are not good or bad It is one's own attitude towards them which makes them good or bad

मुहु मुहुं मोहगुणे जयंत अणेगरूया समण चरंत ।
फासा फुसन्ती असमजस च न तेसि भिक्खू मणसा पउस्से ॥ ३२ ॥
(उ 4 11)

32 A monk, who again and again suppresses the causes (and effects) of delusion, and practises self-control, will (still) be adversely affected by various external objects, but a monk should not hate them even in his mind

Exp He should not hate external objects and things that attract and tempt him. On the other hand, he should be indifferent to them and try to conquer his own mind. If one hates a thing, he is obsessed by it, and so thinks about it again and again.

विरज्जमाणस्स य इंदियत्था सद्दइया तावइयप्पगारा ।

न तस्स सव्वे वि मणुन्नयं वा निव्वत्तयंती अमणुन्नयं वा ॥३३॥

(उ० 32 106)

33 But in the case of one, who is (totally) indifferent to (all) objects of the senses like sounds etc (i.e. the five-fold objects of senses), will not cause (give rise to) any pleasant or unpleasant feelings

सव्वं तओ जाणइ पासए य अमोहणे होइ निरंतराप ।

अणासवे ज्ञाणसमाहिजुस्से आउक्खए मोक्खमुवेइ सुखे ॥३४॥

(उ० 32 109)

34 Then he (a Vītarāga or Siddha), knows and sees everything (in its proper perspective), is free from delusion and hindrances, is free from the influx of karman, is endowed with concentration and deep meditation, and being (absolutely) pure (in mind, thoughts, and deeds), attains perfection (liberation) at the end of his life (i.e. after death)

[XXIII]

Pramāda Carelessness

पमायं कम्ममादिसु अप्यमायं तहाडवर ।

तत्तमायदिसओ वावि वालं पंडियमेव वा ॥ १ ॥

(सू. I 83)

1 Carelessness is called (said to be the cause of) karman (and) carefulness the (cause of the) contrary (viz absence of karman) When the one or the other is predicated (of a man) he is called either a fool or a wise man

Exp. Pramada is explained as laziness or slackness in the observance of religious precepts (duties), and a predilection for the pleasures of senses and being prone to passions. It is a sin of commission and omission. This leads to the acquisition of karman, which in turn causes the soul to wander in samsāra. A careful, watchful, and a circumspect man, on the other hand, is free from karman, and thus he puts an end to samsāra.

इमं च मे अत्थि इमं च नत्थि इमं च मे किञ्च इमं अकिञ्च ।

५ एवमेव लालप्पमाणं हरा हरति त्ति कह पमाप ॥ २ ॥

(उ. 14 15)

2 'This is mine, this is not mine (i.e. I still do not possess that) I have done this, I have (still) not done that (or I must do this, and I should not do

that)', while he is indulging in this frequent prattle (talking in this strain), the robbers (in the form of days or time), are robbing him (of his precious life), what folly or carelessness is this ¹ (or how should one be careless in such circumstances ?)

Exp Man is so much engrossed in his worldly ties and activities, that he rarely finds time to think of the future. But time does take its toll, and every moment drags him nearer and nearer to the end. So a wise man should never be careless.

असंख्यं जीविय मा पमायए जरोवणीयस्स दु नत्थि ताणं ।

एवं विजाणाहि जणे पमत्ते किण्णू विहिंसा अजया गहिन्ति ॥३॥
(३० ४१)

3 Life cannot be prolonged, therefore, one should never be careless, there is also no protection against old age once it overtakes a man. Know (realise), this (O Man !) Those, who are careless, who indulge in injuring living beings, and who are not restrained (self-controlled), to whom will they turn for protection (at the time of death) ?

Exp Asamkhāya—Asamskrta—Something that cannot be joined or repaired

सुत्तेसु यायी पडिबुद्धजीवी न वीससे पंडिए आसुप्पे ।

घोरा मुहुत्ता अवलं सरीरं भावंडपक्खीय चरडप्पमत्तो ॥ ४ ॥
(३० ४६)

4 Even when others (ordinary persons) are asleep, a wise man of quick intelligence (grasp), and

leading a watchful (circumspect) life, should never trust, (i.e. be confident, or be off his guard) Time is terrible, and the body is frail (always) move about (live) very carefully (and watchfully) like a Bharunda bird

Exp Sutta—Supta 1) asleep, and 2) careless in self-control A Bharunda bird is said to have two necks and three legs and is regarded as the standard of watchfulness. Cp Kalpa sutra 118 which describes Mahāvira as 'Bharundapakkhiva appamatte

Cp या निशा तवभूताना तस्या जागर्ति संवमी ।
यस्या जाग्रति भूतानि सा निशा पश्यती मुने ॥

(भा 269)

छन्दनिरोद्धेण उग्रं मोक्ष आसे अहा सिक्खियवम्मधारी ।

पुण्यं वासां चरप्पमत्ते तम्हा मुणी त्थिप्पमुवेइ मोक्खं ॥ ५ ॥

(उ 48)

5 By curbing and controlling his (wayward) will, he (a monk) attains perfection like a horse, which is well-broken (trained) and properly harnessed (and marches toward the battle field). He should be very careful in his behaviour in the early years (of monkhood) for thereby a monk attains liberation quickly

त्थिप्पं न सक्केइ विवेगमेउं तम्हा समुद्धाय पहाय कामे ।

समिच्च छोग्य समया महेस्सी आयाणुरक्खी चरमप्पमत्ते ॥ ६ ॥

(उ 410)

6 One cannot quickly acquire the (power of) discrimination therefore, one should exert one's self,

abandon pleasures, understand (the real nature of) the world with an impartial attitude of mind, and always guarding one's self, lead a careful life

Exp 'Knowledge comes but wisdom lingers'
Viveka—the power to discriminate between right and wrong This is not very easy to achieve

इमपत्तए पेडुयए जहा निवडइ राइगणाण अच्चए ।

एवं मणुयाण जीविंयं समयं गोयम । मा पमायए ॥ ७ ॥

(उ० 101)

7 As the withered (fallow) leaf of a tree falls down after the lapse of a few days (lit nights), even so does the life of men (come to an end), Oh Gautama ! do not be careless even for a moment

Exp Samaya is the smallest divisible unit of time

कुसुंगे जह ओसविन्दुए थोवं चिट्ठइ लम्बमाणए ।

एवं मणुयाण जीविंयं गोयम । मा पमायए ॥ ८ ॥

(उ० 102)

8 As a dew drop remains (hangs) suspended on the tip of a blade of grass just for a very short while (and then drops down), even so the life of men (in this world is short) Oh Gautama ! do not be careless even for a moment

इहहे खलु माणुसे भवे चिरकालेण वि सञ्चपाणिणं ।

मादा य विवाग कम्मुणो समयं गोयम । मा पमायए ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 103)

9 Human birth is indeed very rare (difficult to obtain), even after a long lapse of time, for all living beings. Hard are the ripenings (fruits) of actions Oh Gautama! do not be careless (or one should not be careless) even for a moment

Exp Human birth is a most precious acquisition because Mokṣa — liberation is possible only for a human being And it is obtained only as a result of one's own good karman in the past. Cp Man is the crown of creation

लक्ष्मण वि आरियत्तणं अहीणपच्चिंदियया हु इत्थहा ।

विगल्लिन्दियया हु वीसई समयं गोयम । मा पमायप ॥ १० ॥
(उ 10 17)

10 Even after being born as an Ārya, it is still very difficult to have all the five sense-organs in tact (in perfect order) there is seen deficiency of (one or more) sense-organs (among so many mortals). Oh Gautama! do not be careless even for a moment

अहीणपच्चिंदियस्स पि से लहे उत्तमधम्मसुई हु इत्थहा ।

कुत्तिथिनिस्सेवप अणे समयं गोयम । मा पमायप ॥ ११ ॥
(उ 10 18)

11 And perchance, he may even possess all the five organs of sense in tact but listening to (receiving instructions in) the best religion is again very rare and difficult for, (there are) many (who) follow heretical teachers Oh Gautama! do not be careless even for a moment.

लङ्घूण वि उत्तमं सुखं सद्वहणा पुनरावि दुल्लहा ।

मिच्छन्तिसेवए जणे समयं गोयम' मा पमायए ॥ १२ ॥

(३० 10 19)

12 Even after receiving instructions in the best of religions, to have (firm) faith in it is still very difficult, for (a large number of) people adhere to false faiths (are attracted by them) Oh Gautama ! do not be careless even for a moment

धम्मं पि हु सद्वहन्तया दुल्लहया काएण फासया ।

इह कामणुणेषु मुच्छिन्तया समयं गोयम' मा पमायए ॥ १३ ॥

(३० 10 20)

13 And supposing that they do have faith in (the right) religion, it is still very difficult to put that faith in actual practice, for (we find that) men are addicted to pleasures and enjoyments here (in this world). Oh Gautama ! do not be careless even for a moment

परिजूरह ते सरीरंयं केसा पंडुरया हवंति ते ।

से सोयवले य हायई समयं गोयम' मा पमायए ॥ १४ ॥

(३० 10 21)

14 Your body decays and withers, your hair turn white, all your strength decreases, (and then you will find it very hard to practise religion) Oh Gautama ! do not be careless even for a moment

वोच्छिन्द सिणेहमप्यणो कुसुयं सारइयं व पाणियं ।

से सब्वसिणेहवज्जिए गोयम' मा ॥ १५ ॥

(३० 10-28)

15 Cut off all bonds and ties of attachment from yourself, like a lotus (-leaf) that sheds (drops) autumnal water (and thus) be free from all (bonds) of attachment. Oh Gautama! do not be careless even for a moment

चन्दचाण धण च भारियं पञ्चइओ हि सि अणगारिय ।
मा यन्त पुणो वि आविण समयं गोयम । मा पमायण ॥ १६ ॥
(३ 10 29)

16 You have renounced (the world) and have become a homeless monk after giving up wealth, and wife (family) do not then drink back the vomit (do not crave for the very things that you have so bravely sacrificed and discarded) Oh Gautama! do not be careless even for a moment.

अवले जइ भारवाइण मा मग्गे विसमेइवगाहिया ।
पच्छा पच्छाणुतावण समयं गोयम । मा पमायण ॥ १७ ॥
(३ 10 33)

17 As a weak burden-bearer after taking a rough and uneven road, repents later on, (do you also not make a wrong choice and repent later on). Oh Gautama! do not be careless even for a moment!

तिण्णो हु सि अण्णव मह किं पुण चिद्धसि तीरमागओ ।
अभितुर पार गमित्तण समयं गोयम । मा पमायण ॥ १८ ॥
(३ 10 34)

18. You have (well-rough) crossed the great ocean (of samsāra) Why do you then tarry, havin

(almost) reached the shore ? Hasten now to go to the other side (to cross over) Oh Gautama ! do not be careless even for a moment !

Exp In every journey or race, the last lap is always the most difficult. A swimmer, for instance, gives up within a few yards of the goal, or a runner collapses almost near the winning post. What is necessary at the last-crucial-moment, is the will power, and that is what most people lack.

[XXIV]

Kesayas Passions

कोई माण च मायं च लोहं च पाववहुण ।

धम चत्तारि दोसे उ इच्छन्तो द्वियमप्यणो ॥ १ ॥

(दस 8 37)

1 He, who is desirous of doing good to his own self, should thoroughly discard, (lit vomit or throw out of his system) these four faults (1) anger, (2) pride or vanity, (3) deceit, and (4) greed, which are calculated to increase his sin

काहो पीइ पणासेइ माणो विणयनासणो ।

माया भित्ताणि नासेइ लोभो सद्दविणासणो ॥ २ ॥

(दस 8 38)

2 Anger destroys love pride is detrimental to humility deceit destroys friends (i.e. friendship), while greed destroys everything.

Exp The four passions are very harmful, and even in our everyday life, we find that they work a great havoc. Much more harmful are they in the life of a monk

उवसमेण हणे कोई माणं मद्वया जिणे ।

मायं च अज्जवभावेण लोभं सतोसओ जिणे ॥ ३ ॥

(दस 8 39)

3 One should suppress (supplant) anger by forgivingness (tranquillity), conquer pride by humi-

lity, deceit by straightforwardness, and greed by contentment

कोहो य माणो य अणिग्गहीया माया य लोभो य पवहुमाणा ।

चत्तारि एए कसिणा कसाया सिंचन्ति मूलाइं पुण्ढमवस्स ॥४॥

(दश० ८ ४०)

4 Anger and pride not properly curbed, and deceit and greed being on the increase (i.e. allowed full freedom), — these four are the black (evil) passions, which sprinkle (with water) the roots of (the creeper of) rebirth (the tree of transmigration)

अहे वयइ कोहेणं माणेणं अहमा मई ।

माया गईपडिग्घाओ लोहाओ इहओ भयं ॥५॥

(उ० ९ ५४)

5 He (the soul) sinks low (is degraded) by anger, and attains a low state of existence by pride, deceit is a great hindrance and impediment to his progress (i.e. a better state of existence), and greed endangers both the worlds (i.e. this as well as the next)

पुढवी साली जवा चेय हिरण्यं पसुमिस्सह ।

पडिपुण्णं नालमेगस्स इह विज्जा तवं चरे ॥६॥

(उ० ९ ४९)

6 Knowing that the (whole) earth, with all the rice and barley, as well as all the (stock of) gold, and with all the cattlehead (it contains), — all this put together will not be sufficient (to satisfy) one single man, he should practise penance

Exp There is no limit to the desires and cravings, and the inordinate thirst for possessions and passions is never satisfied

Cp इच्छा दुःखागस्तमा अणनया ।

जहा लाहो तहा लाहो लाहा लोहो परहदई ।

दोमासकथ कज्ज कोडीण वि न निद्वियं ॥ ७ ॥

(३ 8 17)

7 The more you get, the more you want greed (always) increases with gain when a thing could have been accomplished with two Masas only, it is not accomplished even by ten millions

Exp Once a brahmin by name Kapila went to a king only to get two Māsas of gold. The king, pleased with him for his truthfulness, asked him to ask for anything that he liked. Kapila then started thinking whether he should ask for a thousand, or ten thousand, or a hundred thousand and so on. And then all of a sudden it dawned on him that he had gone to the king originally with the idea of getting two Māsas only. And he realised the futility of it all and renounced the world there and then

कसायपञ्चवक्त्राणेण भन्ते ! जीवे किं जणयद् ? कसायपञ्चवक्त्राणेण
वीयरामभावं जणयद् । वीयरामभावपडिवन्ते वि य णं जीवे
समसुहृद्वत्ते भवद् ॥ ८ ॥

(३ 29 36)

8 Oh Revered Sir ! What does the soul achieve by enouncing the passions ? By renouncing the passions,

the soul creates a state where there is complete freedom from passions, and when the soul has thus attained a state wherein it is totally free from passions, he is indifferent to pleasures and pains.

कोहविजयणं भन्ते ! जीवे किं जणयइ ? कोहविजयणं खन्ति जणयइ,
कोहवेयणिज्जं कम्मं न बंधइ, पुट्ठवद्धं च निज्जरेइ ॥ ९ ॥

(३० 29 67)

9 Oh Revered Sir ! What does the soul accomplish by conquering anger ? By conquering anger he creates (gets the quality of) for givingness (peace), does not acquire (bind) the karman that is responsible for experiencing anger, and also annihilates all such karman which he might have acquired (bound) in the past

माणविजयणं भन्ते ! जीवे किं जणयइ ? माणविजयणं मद्दवं जणयइ,
माणवेयणिज्जं कम्मं न बन्धइ, पुट्ठवद्धं च निज्जरेइ ॥ १० ॥

(३० 29 68)

10 Oh Revered Sir ! What does the soul acquire by conquering pride ? By conquering pride he regains mildness (meekness), and does not bind any (more) karman that is responsible for experiencing pride, and also destroys all such karman that he might have acquired in the past

मायाविजयणं भन्ते ! जीवे किं जणयइ ? मायाविजयणं अज्जवं जणयइ,
मायावेयणिज्जं कम्मं न बंधइ, पुट्ठवद्धं च निज्जरेइ ॥ ११ ॥

11 Oh Revered Sir ! What does the soul gain by conquering deceit ? By conquering deceit the soul acquires simplicity (straightforwardness), does not bind (acquire) any (fresh) karman responsible for experiencing deceit, and also annihilates all such karman bound in the past

लोमविजयण भन्ते । जीव किं जणयद् । लोमविजयणं संतोस जणयद्,
लोमवेययियज्ज कम्म न बंधद् पुट्ठवद्धं च निज्जरद् ॥ ११ ॥
(३ 2970)

12 Oh Revered Sir ! What does the soul acquire by conquering greed ? By conquering greed the soul acquires contentment, does not bind any (fresh) karman responsible for experiencing greed, and also annihilates all such karman bound in the past.

Bāla and Paṇḍita The Ignorant and the Wise

रागदोसस्त्रिधा बाला पावं कुर्वन्ति ते ब्रह्म ॥ १ ॥

(सू० I-8-8)

1 The ignorant (fools), being subject to love and hatred (passions), commit manifold sins

वित्तं पशवो य नादो तं बाले शरणं ति मन्नद ।

एते मम तेसु वी अहं नो ताणं शरणं न विज्जई ॥ २ ॥

(सू० I 23 16)

2 The fool thinks that (his) wealth, cattle and relations will be his protection (in the hour of reckoning) (He thinks) —“They belong to me, and I belong to them”, but (in reality) he gets no shelter or protection (from them), (but really speaking he has no shelter, no protection)

न वित्ता तावए भासा कुओ विज्जाणुसासणं ।

विस्त्ता पावकम्मेहिं बाला पण्डियमाणिणो ॥ ३ ॥

(उ० 6 10)

3 Variety (or multiplicity) of speech (or knowledge of various languages) does not afford him protection, how can also instruction in various (magic) lore and arts (protect him)? Fools, thinking themselves to be very wise, sink in (the quagmire of), their own evil deeds

भासे भासे तु जो बालो कुसगणेण तु भुंजए ।

न सी सुक्खायधम्मस्स कल अग्घा सोलसि ॥ ४ ॥

(३ 944)

4 If an ignorant man were to eat (i.e. live on) only a blade of kusa-grass once every month, he does not deserve (is not entitled to) even a sixteenth part of the religion (or merit) as preached in the scriptures (by the Tirthankaras)

Exp This is a case of misguided penance. There are many men in the world who practise very severe austerities and undergo all sorts of physical hardships and privations but these are all futile and vain, unless they proceed from right knowledge

जहा कुम्मे सभंगाए सए वहे समाहरे ।

एवं पायाइं मेहावी अज्झप्पेण समाहरे ॥ ५ ॥

(४ 1816)

5 As a tortoise withdraws its limbs into its own body, so a wise man should withdraw (i.e. shrink from) sins and temptations etc. with (the help of) meditation

न कम्मुणा कम्म खवेन्ति बाला अकम्मुणा कम्म खवेन्ति भीरा ।

मेहाविणो खोममयावतीता संतोसिणो नो पकरोन्ति पाव ॥ ६ ॥

(५ 112-15)

6 The ignorant (fools) cannot destroy their (past) karman by (fresh) actions but the wise annihilate their karman by complete cessation from

actions The wise, who are beyond greed and fear, and are contented, do not commit any (fresh) sins

तुलियाण बालभावं अवालं चैव पंडित ।

चद्रुण बालभावं अवालं सेवण मुणी ॥ ७ ॥

(३० 7 30)

7 A wise man always weighs (compares) the state of the fool and the state of the wise (i e what their fate is going to be), and so abandoning the mode of life of fools, he resorts to the course of conduct of the wise.

A True Brāhmaṇa

जो न सज्जइ आगन्तुं पव्वयन्तो न सोयई ।
रमए अज्जवयणम्मि ते वर्यं ब्रूम माहणं ॥ १ ॥

1 He, who has no worldly attachment after entering (the order), and does not feel any pangs for having renounced the world, and who takes delight in the noble words (preaching of Tirthankaras),—him we call a (true) Brahmana

Exp According to the commentators “He, who does not embrace (his people) on meeting them, and is not sorry when he leaves them,—i.e. who is completely indifferent to them, is a true Brahmana

आयकव्व अहमट्ठं निद्वन्तमलपावग ।
रागदोसमयाईर्यं ते वर्यं ब्रूम माहणं ॥ २ ॥

2. He, who is free from impurities and sins, like burnished gold which is purified of all its impurities in fire, and who is beyond (above) love and hatred,—him we call a true Brahmana.

Exp There is a pun on the word Pāvaga, which could mean (1) Pāvaka fire, and (2) Papaka. sin

तवास्तिर्यं कित्तं वन्तं अवचियमंससोजियं ।
सुव्वय पत्तनिव्वारणं ते वर्यं ब्रूम माहणं ॥ ३ ॥

3 He, who is an ascetic, lean, self-controlled, and who has reduced his flesh and blood (by severe

austerities), who observes the vows (strictly), and has attained Nirvāṇa,—him we call a true Brāhmana

तत्सपाणे वियाणेत्ता संगहेण य थावरे ।

जो न हिंसइ तिविहेण तं वयं बूम माहणं ॥ ४ ॥

4 He, who knows broadly (as well as in details i.e. thoroughly), both the mobile as well as the immobile (types of) living beings, and does not injure them in any of the three ways,—him we call a true Brāhmana.

Exp Trividhā Himsā I (1) In mind, i.e. thoughts, (ii) words, or (iii) deeds II (1) Doing it oneself, (ii) giving consent to others, and (iii) asking others to do it

कोहा वा जइ वा हासा लोहा वा जइ वा भया ।

मुसं न वयई जो उ तं वयं बूम माहणं ॥ ५ ॥

5 He, who does not utter falsehood, whether from anger, or for fun (in jest), or from greed, or from fear,—him we call a true Brāhmana

चित्तमन्तमवित्तं वा अप्पं वा जइ वा बहुं ।

न गिण्हाइ अदत्तं जो तं वयं बूम माहणं ॥ ६ ॥

6 He, who does not take anything that is not (expressly) given to him, be it sentient or non-sentient, small or large (little or much), — him we call a true Brāhmana

विध्वमाणुसतेरिच्छं जो न सेवइ मेहुणं ।

मणसाकायवक्केणं तं वयं बूम माहणं ॥ ७ ॥

7 He, who does not carnally love celestial, human, or animal beings either in thoughts, words or deeds,—him we call a true Brāhmana

जहा पोम्मं जले जाय नोवलिप्पइ धारिणा ।
एव अलित्तं कामेहिं तं धयं धूम माहण ॥ ८ ॥

8 He, who is not defiled (tainted) by pleasures, like a lotus, which grows in water but is not wetted (tainted) by it —him we call a true Brāhmana.

अलोत्तुयं मुहाजीविं अणगारं अकिंचण ।
असंसत्तं गिहत्थेसु तं धयं धूम माहण ॥ ९ ॥

9 He who is not greedy lives on nothing (i.e. by begging only) who has no house, nor (any) property, and has no attachment (contacts) with householders, — him we call a true Brahmana

जदिसा पुव्वस्तज्जेण भाइसंजे य वन्धवे ।
जो न सज्जइ भोगेसु तं धयं धूम माहण ॥ १० ॥
(३ 25 20 29)

10 He, who has abandoned all former ties and associations (with his parents etc.), and also with relatives and kinsmen, and who is not attached to pleasures,— him we call a true Brāhmana

न वि मुंढिणं स्रमणो न ओंकारेण धम्मणो ।
न मुणी रणवासेण कुसचीरेण न तायसो ॥ ११ ॥

11 One does not become a Śramana (a Jain monk) by tonsure (shaving of the head), nor a

Brāhmana by (merely mechanically repeating) the sacred syllable Aum, nor an Ascetic, by (merely) living in the woods, nor a Tāpasa, by (wearing) garments of kuśa-grass and bark

Exp These are only external signs or marks (insignia) of the different orders — Bāhyalinga

समयाए समणो होइ बंसजेरेण बंसणो ।

नाणेण उ मुणी होइ तवेण होइ तावसो ॥ ११ ॥

12 One becomes a Śramana by equanimity; a Brāhmana by chastity (celibacy), a Muni by knowledge, and a Tāpasa by penance

कम्मुणा बंसणो होइ कम्मुणा होइ खत्तिओ ।

वइसो कम्मुणा होइ सुइो हवइ कम्मुणा ॥ १२ ॥

13 By one's own actions one becomes a Brāhmana, or a Kṣatriya, or a Vaiśya, or a Śūdra

एए पाउकरे बुद्धे जेहि होइ सिणायओ ।

सव्वकम्मविणिम्मुक्कं तं वयं वूम माहणं ॥ १३ ॥

14. Thus has the Enlightened One declared, (that it is by these qualities) through which one becomes a Snātaka — a perfect monk, him, — who is free from all kārmic bondage,— we call a true Brāhmana

Exp Snātaka— (1) A Brahmin who has completed his studies at Gurukula, (2) a perfect or liberated soul.

एवं गुणसमाउत्ता जे भवन्ति दिवत्तमा ।

ते समत्या समुद्धत्त परमप्याणमेव य ॥ १५ ॥

(उ० 25-31-35)

15 The best amongst the Brāhmuns (lit. twice-born), who possess all the good qualities mentioned above, they (alone) are able to uplift (save) themselves as well as others

[XXVII]

Vīrya : Exertion or Energy

दुहा चेयं सुयन्त्राय वीरियं ति पबुच्चई ।

किं नु वीरस्त वीरत्तं कहं चेयं पबुच्चई ॥ १ ॥

(सू० I.8.1)

1 Vīrya (Exertion) is said and defined to be of two types But what is called the exertion of the virtuous (brave), and how is it explained (or defined) ?

Exp The second line is a question put by the disciple, while the first line is a statement made by the teacher Vīrya exertion, energy, power to act. This is inherent in the soul No soul in the saṃsāra can ever remain inactive Activity or exertion is the very essence of the soul in saṃsāra

कम्ममेगे पवेदेन्ति अकम्मं वा वि सुव्वया ।

एण्हि दोहि ठाणेहि जेहि दीसन्ति मच्चिया ॥ १ ॥

(सू० I 82)

2 Some (heretic teachers) say that Vīrya consists in work, while others, who are pious (and zealous observers of vows), declare that it consists in complete cessation of activity (Akarman) Men appear to be (broadly) divided into two classes from these two points of view

Exp. (1) Sakarma-vīrya and (2) Akarma-vīrya, When the Samsārī Jīva is still under the influence of

by intuition, or through listening (to religious instructions from his preceptors)

Exp After a long practice and stay with teachers, a monk knows instinctively what is right and what is wrong. But failing this intuition, he should strictly adhere to the instructions he receives from his preceptors.

अणु माण च माय च स पडिन्नाय पंडिप ।

आयतत्ये सुआदाय एव वीरस्स वीरिये ॥ ९ ॥

(सू. I 8 18)

9 A wise monk should completely renounce pride and deceit, even in their minutest form (or infinitesimal degree), having properly realised (and understood) the true and real nature of the soul (or mokṣa). This is the exertion of a hero (or a wise man).

Exp The commentators give four different interpretations of the first line, probably based on different readings. अणु is variously explained. But the best interpretation here would be अणुमात्रम्.

पण्डिप वीरिये लब्धु निग्घायाय पवत्तण ।

धुणे पुट्ठकब्बे कम्मं एव वा वि ण कुट्ठई ॥ १० ॥

(सू. I 15 22)

10 A wise man, who has gained strength (in exertion or control) which leads to the expiation of sinful actions, annihilates (lit. shakes off) all the karmas done in the past, and does not also incur any fresh karma.

जे अबुद्धा महाभागा वीरा असम्मत्तदंसिणो ।

असुद्धं तेसिं परक्कंतं सफलं होइ सव्वसो ॥ ११ ॥

(सू० I 8 22)

11 Those men, who are not enlightened, and are (followers) of wrong faith (i.e. not endowed with righteousness), though they may be renowned as heroes (in the world, i.e. though they may be exerting a good deal), still (all) their exertions are always impure and bearing fruit (i.e. leading to fresh karman, and consequent samsāra)

जे य बुद्धा महाभागा वीरा सम्मत्तदंसिणो ।

सुद्धं तेसिं ' ' अफलं होइ सव्वसो ॥ १२ ॥

(सू० I 8 23)

12 (On the other hand), the Enlightened Ones, the renowned heroes, endowed with righteousness (right faith), the good ones, — their exertions and efforts are always pure, and bear absolutely no fruit whatsoever, (i.e. their actions do not lead to fresh karman, and so they put an end to samsāra).

ज्ञाणजोमं समाहट्ठु कायं विउत्तेज्ज सव्वसो ।

तितिक्खं परमं नच्चा आमोक्खत्ताए परिट्ठप्पज्जासि ॥ १३ ॥

(सू० I 8 26)

13 Meditating, and performing religious practices, one should thoroughly abandon the body (i.e. all care of the body), realising that forbearance is the highest (principle, or the paramount duty), he (a monk) should live (lead an ascetic life) till he attains liberation

[XXVIII]

Samyaktva Righteousness

निसर्गगुणस्वरूपं आणादं सूतबीजरूपमेव ।

अभिगमवित्यारूपं किरियासत्सेवधम्मरूपं ॥ १ ॥

(स० 28-16)

1 Faith is produced by —

- (i) Nisarga — Nature in the case of certain beings it is just natural or unborn inclination.
- (ii) Upadesa — Instruction.
- (iii) Āgā — Command, order either because some one, whom he normally obeys, has ordered him, or because he is told that this is the command of the Tīrthamkaras.
- (iv) Sūtra — By a study of the Sūtras i.e. canonical works
- (v) Bija — Suggestion he does not require any exposition in details, but has a very quick grasp and understanding. Just as a drop of oil expands on the surface of water, similarly an indication or suggestion is enough for such a man
- (vi) Abhigama — By comprehension or understanding of the meaning of the entire Āgama (including the twelfth Aṅga Dīṣṭivāda.)
Cp (स० १२ अ० १० किरियासत्सेवधम्मरूपं । (स० २८-१६)

- (vii) Vistāra —By a complete course of study, and by means of various proofs and modes of reasoning. Such a person is very argumentative, and is not prepared to take anything on trust, unless his reason is satisfied. Cp the king Paesi in Rāyapasenajjam.
- (viii) Kriyā —By performing all the religious duties enjoined for a pious man. Constant practice of these duties leads him to right belief in the end.
- (ix) Samkṣepa —By a brief exposition of the scriptures and religious principles.
- (x) Dharma —By complete or implicit belief in the religion as preached by the Jinas. He needs no proofs and no arguments. The word of the Jinas is his Gospel.

Exp The broad nature and prerequisites of Samyaktva have been explained in section VII — Mokṣamārga. The details are supplied here.

निस्संकिय-निक्कंखिय-निब्बितिगिच्छा अमूढदिट्ठी य ।

अवबूहथिरीकरणे वच्छल्लपभावेण अट्ठ ॥ ९ ॥

(२० 28.31)

2 Samyaktva par excellence—of the highest order—depends on the following eight points —

- (1) Nissankita — Not to entertain any doubts and misgivings regarding the tenets or the doctrine.

- (ii) Niskanksita — Not to have predilection or preference for any heterodox system. There are people who cannot take a firm decision and their minds go on oscillating.
- (iii) Nirvikikitsa — Not to be doubtful regarding the fruit of Dharma e.g. people sometimes feel that they are being duped and deprived of their pleasures etc by the promise of a better world in the next birth.
- (iv) Amudha-dṛṣṭi — Not to have one's faith or belief shaken by the glamour or pomp and influence of heretics
- (v) Upabrmhana — Praising and encouraging a righteous man belonging to one's own religion. Encouraging co-religionists, appreciating and praising them for their righteousness
- (vi) Sthirīkarana — Encouraging and helping a co-religionist in firmly following the tenets. Sometimes a weak man gives in, when faced with rigorous discipline, or when he has committed a sin. On such occasions he needs sympathy and understanding. He should be brought to the right path by proper means and be persuaded to stick to the right path
- (vii) Vātsalya — Love and affection for co-religionists. He should always shower love and

affection on them, and should be always by their side in all their trials and tribulations (in a true missionary spirit).

- (viii) Prabhāvanā :— By exalting the doctrine He should always act in such a manner that his actions, will always bring glory and credit to his religion

मिच्छादंसणरत्ता सनियाना कण्हलेसमोगाढा ।

इय जे मरंति जीवा तेसिं पुण इल्लहा बोही ॥ ३ ॥

(उ० 36 258)

3 Those living beings, who are engrossed in false faith, who commit sins, and are enveloped in black *Lesyā* till their death,—for them enlightenment is very difficult to obtain

Exp For *Lesyā* see section XXX infra

सम्मदंसणरत्ता अनियाना सुकलेसमोगाढा ।

इय जे मरंति जीवा तेसिं सुलहा भवे बोही ॥ ४ ॥

(उ० 36-257)

4 (On the other hand) those living beings, who are intent on righteousness, do not desire for any worldly fruit for their austerities (or commit no sins), and are enveloped in white *Lesyā*,—for them enlightenment (or *Samyaktva*) is easy to obtain

जिणवयणे अणुरत्ता जिणवयणं जे करेति भावेण ।

अमला असंकलिद्धा ते होंति परित्संसारि ॥ ५ ॥

(उ० 36 259)

5 Those, who are devoted to (and love) the creed of the Jinas and who also practise it devoutly and piously are pure and not tormented by passions etc. are the ones who will cross the samsara, (or their samsāra will be for a limited – finite – period only)

धम्मसद्धाए णं भंते' जीदे किं जणयइ? धम्मसद्धाए णं
सायासोकखेसु रज्जमाणे विरज्जइ ॥ ६ ॥

(३ 293)

6 “ Oh Revered Sir ! What does the soul acquire by faith in the religion ? By faith in the religion, the soul becomes indifferent to pleasures (or agreeable sensations) to which he was (formerly) attached.

सम्मादिट्ठी जीवो जइ वि हु पाव समायरइ किंचि ।
अप्यो सि होइ बधो जेण न निद्वघसे कुणइ ॥ ७ ॥

(वदितुसुत्त गा 36)

7 The soul who is endowed with righteousness, may sometimes commit some sinful activities but he does so innocently, and therefore the (kārmic) bond is negligible, because he does not commit those actions with wicked intentions (i.e. with a desire to injure others)

Exp Even in ordinary life, we look to the 'motive of the person committing a crime And if there is no motive or intention then the offender is let off with a light punishment

[XXIX]

Bhāvanā : Reflections

भावणाजोगसुद्धया जले नावा व आहिया ।
नावा व तीरसंपन्ना सब्बदुक्खा तिउट्ठइ ॥ १ ॥

(सू० I 15 5)

1 He, whose soul is purified by (constantly) meditating on Reflections, is said to be like a ship (floating) on water, just as the ship reaches the shore (safely), he also reaches the end of all sorrows and miseries

Exp These Reflections or 'Mental Whispers' on the vanity and futility of human life, and the world in general, are a source of courage, and serve as a fillip and strength when a man is dejected and lepressed

जन्मं दुक्खं जरा दुक्खं रोगाणि मरणाणि य ।
अहो दुक्खो हु संसारो जत्थ कीसन्ति जन्तवो ॥ २ ॥

(उ० 19 15)

2 Birth is misery, old age is misery, and so are diseases and death Oh ! This saṃsāra, wherein living beings suffer pains and agonies, is nothing but misery.

इमं सरीरं अणिच्चं असुई असुइसंभवं ।
असासयावासमिणं दुक्खकेसाण भायणं ॥ ३ ॥

(उ० 19 12)

3 This body is not permanent it is impure and of impure origin it is but a temporary habitation (of the soul), and is (nothing but) a receptacle of suffering and pain

गद्माइ मिज्जंति बुयाबुयाणा णरा परे पचसिहा कुमारा ।
जुयाणमा मज्झिमथेरगा य चयति ते आउखण पलीणा ॥ ४ ॥
(सू. I 7 10)

4 Some (living beings) die as embryos, others as babies who can or cannot (yet) talk still others as boys wearing tufts of hair others as youths, or in middle age, or in old age at the expiry of their life, all have to discard the body and depart (from this world)

वाराणि य सुया चैव मित्ता य सह बन्धवा ।
जीवन्तमणुजीयन्ति मयं नाणुद्ययन्ति य ॥ ५ ॥
(उ. 18 14)

5 Wives and sons, friends and relations, all depend on a man so long as he is living, but none of them follow him in death

त पक्कं तुच्छसरिरं से चिहिय इहिय उ पायगेणं ।
भज्जा य पुत्ता वि य नायजा य दायारमं अणुसंक्रमन्ति ॥ ६ ॥
(सू. 13 25)

6 Having burnt his lone (forlorn) and worthless body on the funeral pile, his wives, sons, as well as other kinsmen follow another, who will provide for them (i.e. some one else, who now becomes the head of the family)

न तस्स दुक्खं विभयन्ति नाइओ न भित्तवग्गा न सुया न वन्धवा ।
एकौ सयं पच्चणुहोइ दुक्खं कत्तारमेव अणुजाइ कम्मं ॥ ७ ॥

(३० 13 23)

7 Neither his kinsmen, nor friends, nor sons, nor relations will share his sufferings, he (the doer) alone suffers his sorrows and misery, for, the karman follows only the doer

नीहरन्ति मयं पुत्ता पियरं परमदुक्खिया ।

पियरो वि तद्वा पुत्ते वन्धू रायं तवं चरं ॥ ८ ॥

(३० 18 15)

8. The sons, in great sorrow (and bereavement), will remove the dead body of their father (to the cremation ground), and similarly the parents (remove) the dead bodies of (their) sons, and relatives (or brothers) O King ! Practise penance

अव्भागमियम्मि वा इहे अहवा उक्कमिण भवन्तिण ।

एगस्स गई य आगई विट्ठमन्ता सरणं न भवई ॥ ९ ॥

(सू० 12 3 17)

9 When calamity befalls him, or when death approaches him, he has to go (to the other world), and come back (i.e. be reborn again) all alone, (therefore) the wise realise that parents, relatives, friends etc cannot give one (any) protection

चेत्त्वा दुपयं च चउप्पयं च खेत्तं गिहं धणधनं च सव्वं ।

सकम्मवीओ अवसी पयाइ परं भवं सुंदरपावर्गं वा ॥ १० ॥

(३० 13 24)

10 Leaving behind bipeds and quadrupeds, his fields, house, corn, wealth and (in fact) leaving everything, the helpless man, accompanied only by his karman, departs to the other world (or existence), whether it is good or bad (depending on his own karman)

Exp सकम्मीज — It could also mean 'स्वकर्मबीज' — 'with his own Karman as the seed for his future birth. But the first sense is preferable.

माया पिया णुसा माया भज्जा पुत्ता य ओरसा ।

नालं ते मम ताणाय लुप्यतस्स सकम्मुणा ॥ ११ ॥

(३० 63)

11 Mother father, daughter in law, brother, wife, and one's own sons (all these) will not be able to afford me any protection, when I shall have to suffer for my actions

सब्ब जगं जइ तुहं सव्वे यावि धणं भवे ।

सब्ब पि ते अपज्जत्त नेव ताणाय तं तव ॥ १२ ॥

(३ 1439)

12 Even if the whole world belongs to you, and you own all the wealth (and treasures in the world), even then you will find all that (possession) inadequate (i.e. you will not be happy with it), and it will certainly not be able to save (protect) you (in the hour of death)

चिच्चा वित्तं च पुत्ते य जाइओ य परिगहं ।

चिच्चाण अंतर्गं सोयं निरवेक्खो पखियेय ॥ १३ ॥

(म० I 97)

13 Leaving his wealth, sons, kinsmen and (all) his property (possessions), and leaving sorrow that never ceases, a monk should move about without any (worldly) desires and expectations

बन्धव्यमोक्त्वो अज्ज्ञत्येव ॥ १४ ॥

(आचा० 52)

14 Release from bondage is entirely dependent on one's own self (i.e. it is not caused by any external agency)

एगम्भू अरण्ये वा जहा उ चर्य मिणे ।

एवं धम्मं चरिस्सामि संजमेण तवेण य ॥ १५ ॥

(व० 1977)

15 As a deer roams about in the forest, all by itself (all alone), even so I shall practise the religion by (observing) self-control and practising austerities

Exp This is called Mrgacaryā—wandering, or moving about all alone like a wild animal (or deer). Just as a wild animal does not care for any companion, even so a monk should not seek a companion in life. He should learn to lead a solitary life

त मा णं तुम्हे देवाणुविद्या. माणुस्सण्णु कामभोगेसु सज्जह
रज्जह गिज्जह मुज्जह अज्जोववज्जह ॥ १६ ॥

(नाया० viii P. 114)

16 Do you not, therefore, O Beloved of Gods ! be attached to, interested in, be greedy of, be

infatuated and obsessed with human pleasures and enjoyments

Exp Mallī (the only female Tirthamkara), is addressing the six kings – her friends and companions in austerities in her previous birth

As a result of Mayaśalya (deceit), she was born a woman. She used to practise more severe austerities on the sly or secretly, and thus she not only was guilty of a sort of breach of promise, but she was also guilty of deceit – *though in a good cause*. The story of Mallī is given in Nāyādharmakahāo ch VIII.

[XXX]

Leśyās

किण्वा नीला य काळ य तेज पद्मा तहेच य ।
सुक्लेसा य छट्टा य नामाई तु जहक्कर्म ॥ १ ॥

(उ० ३४३)

1 The names, in due order, of the different Leśyās are as follows —

(1) Kṛṣṇā—black, (2) Nīlā — blue, (3) Kāpotā — grey, (4) Tejas — red, (5) Padma — yellow-pistal coloured, and (6) Śuklā—white

Exp The doctrine of Leśyās—‘ Colours or tinges of the soul ’ — is peculiar to Jainism. The soul, by nature, is pure and spotlessly white as crystal. But the Kārmic matter (Pudgala) that envelops the soul, produces the various colours or tinges, and they are said to be the colours of the soul. These Leśyās are the causes of the duration of karman. कर्मस्थितिहेतव लेस्या । They are also defined as अव्यवसायविशेषा — the different conditions produced in the soul by the influence of different karman, they are, as it were, the reflection of the karman of the soul. Cp

कुणादिप्रवृत्तिभिर्मान् परिणामो य आत्मन ।

रक्तदिग्भ्यश्च तत्राय लेस्यागच्छ प्रवर्तते ॥ (उत्त० अव०)

‘ The alteration produced on the soul, just as on a crystal by the presence of black things etc , is denoted

by the word *Leśya*. The *Leśyā*, or according to the above explanation, what produces *Leśya*, is a subtle substance accompanying the soul. The etymology of the word is rather obscure

पंचासव्यवत्तो तीर्हि अगुत्तो छसु अविरओ य ।

तिव्वारभपरिणओ खुद्धो साहसिओ नरो ॥ २ ॥

निद्धंघसपरिणामो निस्ससो अजिद्विओ ।

पयजोगसमाउत्तो किण्हलेसं तु परिणमे ॥ ३ ॥

(उ 3421-22)

2 & 3 A man who is urged by the five *Āsravas* (i.e. one who commits the five-fold sins), who is not guarded by the three *Guptis*, who has not ceased to injure the six-fold (living beings), commits cruel acts, is wicked and violent is not afraid of (is blind to) consequences, is hardhearted, and who has not subdued his senses,—such a man develops the black *Leśyā*

इस्ताअमरिसअतवो अविज्जमाया अहीरिया य ।

गेही पओसे य सडे पमत्ते रसलोलुप सायगवेसप ॥ ४ ॥

आरमाआ अविरओ खुद्धो साहसिओ नरो ।

पयजोगसमाउत्तो नीललेसं तु परिणमे ॥ ५ ॥

(उ 3423-24)

4 & 5 A man possessing the following (bad) qualities viz. envy, anger, lack of austerities (self-control) ignorance deceit, shamelessness, greed, hatred, cunningness and wiles a man who is greedy of pleasures and always pursues (fresh) pleasures,

and enjoyments, who does not abstain from harmful (sinful) undertakings, who is wicked and violent, a man engrossed in such types of activities (possessing the above-mentioned bad qualities) develops the blue Lesyā

वंके वंकसमायारे नियडिल्ले अणुज्जुण ।

पलित्चग ओवहिए मिच्छविट्ठी अणारिए ॥ ६ ॥

उप्फालगदुट्ठवाई य तेणे यावि य मच्छरी ।

एयजोगसमाउत्तो काऊलेसं तु परिणमे ॥ ७ ॥

(उ० 34 25-26)

6 & 7 A man who is crooked (dishonest) in words and deeds, who is base (and treacherous), not straightforward, a dissembler and deceiver, given to prevarication and cheating, unrighteous (perverse and heretic), vile (ignoble), one who indulges in hurtful (insulting) and vile (or vituperative) talk, a thief, full of jealousy, a man of such (bad) habits, and engrossed in such activities, develops the grey Lesyā

नीयावित्ती अचवले अमाई अकुऊहले ।

विणीयविणए दंते जोगवं उवहाणवं ॥ ८ ॥

पियधम्मे ददधम्मेऽवज्जभीरु हिएसए ।

एयजोगसमाउत्तो तेऊलेसं तु परिणमे ॥ ९ ॥

(उ० 34 27-28)

8 & 9 A man who is humble (and modest), steadfast (not fickle-minded), free from deceit and inquisitiveness (morbid curiosity), well-disciplined

and restrained, attentive to his studies and duties, who loves religion, and is firm in (practising) it who is afraid of sin and strives after the good (of his self or who strives for the good of all), — a man of such habits and who is absorbed in such activities, develops the red *Leśya* (*Tejas*)

पयणुकोहमाणे य मायालोमे य पयणुए ।

पस्तचित्ते क्तप्पा ओगव उवहाणव ॥ १० ॥

तहा पयणुवार्ह य उवसंते जिइदिण ।

पयजोगसमाउत्तो पम्हलेस तु परिणमे ॥ ११ ॥

(३ 34 29-30)

10 & 11 A man who has but little anger, pride, deceit, and greed, whose mind is calm and tranquil, who is well-controlled, who is (very) attentive and careful in his studies and duties, who speaks but little, is calm, and subdues his senses,—a man of such habits, and who is absorbed in such activities, develops the yellow-pistil *Leśyā* (*Padmā*)

अट्टरुहाणि वज्जित्ता धम्मसुक्काणि ज्ञायए ।

पस्तचित्ते क्तप्पा समिण गुत्ते य गुत्तिहु ॥ १२ ॥

सरगे वीयरगे वा उवसंते जिइदिण ।

पयजोगसमाउत्तो सुक्कलेस तु परिणमे ॥ १३ ॥

(३ 34 31-32)

12 & 13 A man, who avoids the two types of evil meditation, viz. *Ārta* and *Raudra* — sinful and wicked thinking, but engages himself in auspicious thoughts, viz. *Dharma* and *Sūkla dhyana* — Religious

and auspicious meditation, whose mind is at peace, who is self-controlled, who practises the (five) Samitis and (three) Guptis,—whether he still possesses passions or is entirely free from them, (but) is very peaceful and tranquil, and controls his senses,—a man of such habits, and absorbed in such activities develops the white Leśyā (Śuklā)

Exp Dhyāna Meditation, deep thinking It is of four types (i) Ārta, (ii) Raudra, (iii) Dharma and (iv) Śukla The first two are evil, and the last two are auspicious types of meditation

किष्णा नीला काक तिन्त्रि वि पयाओ अहम्मलेसाओ ।
पयाहि तिहि वि जीवो दुग्गहं उववज्जई ॥ १४ ॥

(उ० 34 56)

14 The black, blue and grey Leśyās are sinful types of Leśyās By means of these three Leśyās the soul is born in miserable and low types of existence (such as hellish beings, lower animals etc)

तेज पम्हा सुक्का तिन्त्रि वि पयाओ धम्मलेसाओ ।
पयाहि तिहि वि जीवो सुग्गहं उववज्जई ॥ १५ ॥

(उ० 34 57)

15 The red, yellow, and white Leśyās are good and auspicious types of Leśyās By means of these (three), the soul attains a good form of existence (such as celestial or human birth)

तम्हा पयासि लेसाणं अणुभावे वियाणिया ।

अप्पसत्थाओ वज्जित्ता पसत्थाओऽहिद्विष मुणी ॥ १६ ॥

(३० ३४ ६१)

16 A monk should, therefore, know and comprehend the true nature (and effect) of these *Lesyās*, he should avoid the evil (inauspicious) ones, and adopt the good (auspicious) ones

[XXXI]

Mṛtṭyu . Death

माणुस्सं च अणिच्चं दाहिजरोमरणवेयणापउरं ॥ १ ॥

(जौप० सूत्र-34)

1 Human birth is only momentary and abounds in diseases, old age, death, pangs and agonies

बहुरा बुद्धा य पासह गवसत्या वि चयन्ति माणवा ।

सेणे जह चट्ठयं हरे एवं आउत्तयम्मि तुद्धई ॥ २ ॥

(सू० I 2.12)

2 See, (in this world) young and old, and (sometimes) even in the mother's womb, human beings die As a hawk (pounces upon and) catches a quail, so is the span of life snapped (by death), when the (term of) life is spent (exhausted)

Exp Just as a hawk pounces upon, and kills a quail all of a sudden, similarly Death comes down upon living beings, like a bolt from the blue And it spares *none*, whether young or old, even the unborn. ' Death lays His icy hand on all '

जहेह सीहो य मिगं गहाय मच्छ नरं नेइ हु अन्तकालि ।

न तस्स माया व पिया य भाया कालम्मि तम्मसहरा मयन्ति ॥ ३ ॥

(उ० 13 22)

3 Just as a lion seizes an antelope (or an animal) and carries it off, so Death carries off a man in his

last hour (when his end has come) neither his mother nor father, nor brother can come to his help at that (crucial) time

Exp It is better to read तन्मी सह्रा भवेति । सह्र (देही)—A friend, companion rather than तन्मि भंसह्रा etc which would mean—at the crucial hour, they cannot share even a part of his life the first reading is preferable

इह जीविष राय असासयन्मि धनियं तु पुण्णाइ अकुट्टवमाणो ।
से सोयई मच्चुमुहोवणीप धम्म अकाऊण परम्मि लोप ॥ ४ ॥
(उ० 13-21)

4 Oh King! he, who in this life which is but purely temporary has done absolutely no good actions, and has not (at all) practised religion,—such a man, (bitterly) repents when he becomes a prey to death, and reaches the next world (or birth)

जस्सत्थि मच्चुणा सक्खं जस्स चत्थि पलायणं ।

जो जाणे न मरिस्सामि सो हु कखे सुप सिया ॥ ५ ॥

(उ 14 27)

5 He, who has (formed) friendship with Death (i.e. is on friendly terms with Death) or who is confident of escaping from Him or who knows (for certain) that he will not die he alone may expect the morrow (i.e. he alone can expect to see the next day dawn)

Exp How can you be sure of being alive to-morrow when you do not know when you will die?

So do not put off till to-morrow what you can do to-day.

अज्ज्ञवसाणानिमित्ते आहारे वेयणापराधाए ।

फाले आणापाप्प सत्तविहं झिज्जए आउं ॥ ६ ॥

(स्थानाङ्क० vii)

6 Life diminishes in the following seven ways (seven causes of decay and death) --

- (1) Adhyavasāna Brooding over some (shocking) incident, sorrow, love, hatred, etc
- (2) Nimitta Wounds inflicted by weapons, etc
- (3) Āhāra (Excess of) food
- (4) Vedanā Suffering pain, agony, diseases etc
- (5) Parāghāta Wounds caused by falling down etc from great heights
- (6) Sparsā Coming into contact with a hard substance like stone etc, or a poisonous reptile, etc
- (7) Āna-prāna Respiration, when the respiratory system fails Suffocation, Asphyxia

जहा सागडिओ जाणं समं हिच्चा महापहं ।

विसमं भग्गमोदण्णो अक्खे भग्गस्मि सौयई ॥ ७ ॥

एवं धम्मं विउद्धम्म अहम्मं पडिबज्जिया ।

बाले मच्छुमुहं पत्ते अक्खे भग्गे व सौयई ॥ ८ ॥

(२० 5 14-15)

7 & 8 As a cart-driver, who knowingly leaves the even and smooth high way, and getting on a

rugged road, repents when the axle is broken, even so the fool, who transgresses religion (or abandons it), and embraces unrighteousness (sin), repents when he is a prey to death, like the cart-driver repenting for the broken axle.

Epx ज्ञाने-ज्ञानम्—knowing, being aware of But it is possible that we have a pun here ज्ञान-यानम्—Vehicle भ्रम-अक्ष - Axle and इन्द्रिय or sense organs 'When his sense-organs or इन्द्रिय are broken i.e. when he has lost their use and is a crippled old man.

सन्तिमे य इवे ठाणा अक्खाया मारणन्तिया ।

अकाममरण चेव सकाममरण तद्वा ॥ ९ ॥

बालाणे अकामं तु मरण असई भवे ।

पण्डितानां सकामं तु उक्कोसेण सह भव ॥ १० ॥

(व 52-3)

9 & 10 There are said to be two types of death. I Sakama-marana Voluntary death, death with one's own will and II Akama-marana Involuntary death death against one's will Death against one's will or (involuntary) death is that of ignorant men, and it happens many times but voluntary, or death with one's own will, is that of the wise, and it comes only once.

Exp The ignorant die many deaths in the sense that they are born again and again. In the case of the wise, i.e. the Kevalins, they die only *once* Ukkosena - Utkarsena - Maximum.

तथो से मरणन्तामि चाले संतस्तर्ह भया ।

अकाममरणं मर्हं धुत्तेव कलिणा जिण ॥ ११ ॥

(उ० 5-16)

11 And then, at the hour of death, the fool is tortured and trembles with fear, he dies the death against his will (involuntary death), having lost his only chance, like a gambler vanquished by Kali.

Exp Kali - A technical term from the play of dice, a particular throw of the dice

न संतसंति मरणंते सीलवन्ता बहुस्तुया ॥ १२ ॥

(उ० 5-29)

12 (But) the virtuous and the learned are not in the least afraid at the time of death

बालमरणाणि बहुसो अकाममरणाणि चेव बहुयाणि ।

मरिहिंति ते वराया जिणवयणं जे न जाणंति ॥ १३ ॥

(उ० 36-260)

13 Those miserable wretches, who do not know the creed of the Jinās, will many a time die the deaths of the ignorant and the fool, and also 'deaths against one's own will' (i.e. involuntary deaths).

Para-bhava : Rebirth

तेणावि जं कयं कम्म सुह वा जइ वा दुह ।
कम्मणा तेण सज्जुत्तो गच्छई उ परं भवे ॥ १ ॥

(उ० 18 17)

1 And whatever actions he (a man) may have committed, good or bad, accompanied by that Karman only, he goes to the next form of existence

अद्धाण जो महंतं तु अपाहेज्जो पवज्जई ।
गच्छतो सो इही होइ छुहातण्हाइपीडिओ ॥ २ ॥
एव धम्मं अकाळण जो गच्छइ परं भव ।
गच्छन्तो सो इही होइ वाहिरोगेहिं पीडिओ ॥ ३ ॥
अद्धाण जो महंतं तु सपाहेज्जो पवज्जई ।
गच्छन्तो सो सुही होइ छुहातण्हाविवज्जिओ ॥ ४ ॥
एवं धम्मं पि काळण ओ गच्छइ परं भव ।
गच्छन्तो सो सुही होइ अप्पकम्मे अवेयणे ॥ ५ ॥

(उ 19 18-21)

⁴ 2 He who embarks on (undertakes) a long journey, with no provisions (for the road) will come to grief on his way (there), suffering from hunger and thirst.

3. Similarly he, who starts for (goes to) the next world without having followed religion, will come to grief on his way there being afflicted by illness and disease.

4 (On the other hand) he, who starts on a long journey equipped with (proper) provisions, will be happy (and comfortable) on his way there, being free from (the pangs of) hunger and thirst.

5 Similarly he who, having practised religion, starts (his journey) for the next world, will be happy on his journey there, as he will have little Karman and little suffering (He will not be burdened with the load of Karman, and consequently his suffering will also be less)

इह जीवियं अणियमेत्ता पढभट्टा समाहिजोपेहि ।

ते कामभोगरसगिद्धा उववज्जन्ति आसुरे काए ॥ ६ ॥

(उ० 8 14)

6 Those, who (even after becoming monks) do not discipline their lives (i.e. do not adhere to discipline), are (said to be) fallen from meditation and ascetic practices (austerities), they are greedy of pleasures, and enjoyments, good and tasty food, and are born again as Asuras

जे केह वाला इह जीवियट्टी पायाइं कस्माइं करेन्ति रुद्धा ।

ते घोररुद्धे तमिसंधयारे तिठ्यामितावे नरण पडंति ॥ ७ ॥

(सू० 1 5 1-5)

7 All those cruel and ignorant fools who, in this world, for the sake of worldly life commit sinful actions, will sink (fall) into the horrible hell which is enveloped in dense darkness, and is full of intense suffering

मा पच्छ असाधुता मये अब्बेही अशुस्तास अप्यगं ।
अहिय च असाधु सोयई से यणई परिवेयई वहुं ॥ ८ ॥
(सू० I. 277)

8 Lest the lot of the wicked should befall you, get over (escape) the influence of senses, and discipline yourself a bad (wicked) man grieves much, he howls (groans) and bewails a lot (when he goes to hell)

अहाऽऽपस समुद्दिस्स कोइ पोसेज्ज पल्लयं ।
ओयणं अवसं वेज्जा पोसेज्जावि सयंगणे ॥ ९ ॥
तओ से पुट्ठे परिवुट्ठे जायमेप महोदरे ।
पीणिप विउले वेहे आपस परिकंखप ॥ १० ॥
जाव न पइ आपसे ताव जीवइ से इही ।
अह पत्तम्मि आपसे सीसं छेनुण भुज्जई ॥ ११ ॥
अहा से खलु ओरब्बमे आपसाप समीहिप ।
एवं बाले अहम्मिद्वे इहई नरयाउयं ॥ १२ ॥

(उ० 71-4)

9 Just as somebody with a view to (entertain) a guest, brings up a young ram gives it rice and gram, and feeds it in his yard

10. Then when it is fed and becomes big, fat, and large-bellied is fattened, and has a plump body, it awaits (i.e. becomes ready for) the guest

11. So long as no guest arrives the miserable (wretch) lives but as soon as a guest arrives its head is cut off, and it is eaten

12 As the ram is intended for a guest, even so the ignorant and the worst type of sinner longs for (i.e. is destined for or awaits) the life in hell

जहा कागिणिण हेळं सहस्सं हारए नरो ।

अपत्थं अंवगं भोच्चा राया रज्जं तु हारए ॥ १३ ॥

एवं माणुस्सगा कामा देवकामाण अन्तिए ।

सहस्सगुणिया भुज्जो आडं कामा य विव्विया ॥ १४ ॥

अणेगवासानउया जा सा पण्णवओ ठिई ।

जाणि जीयन्ति दुम्मेहा ऊणे वाससयाउए ॥ १५ ॥

(उ० ७ ११-१३)

13 Just as a man, for the sake of one Kākinī (risked and) lost a thousand (Kārsāpanas), or as a king lost his kingdom (as well as his life), by eating man oes, which he was forbidden to do

14 Even so are human pleasures compared with (lit by the side of) divine pleasures, divine life and divine pleasures are thousand times, and even more, superior (to human life and pleasures)

15 The duration of life of one, who is endowed with (excellent) knowledge, is many Nayutas of years, but the ignorant and evil-minded ones stake (lose) all that for the sake of a (paltry) life of less than a hundred years

Exp Kākinī—Eightieth part of a Kārsāpana, a coin current in ancient India. The stories alluded to are from every day life, cp Pennywise and Pound-foolish. Sometimes a man loses a large sum of money in trying to save a few paise. Similarly, when a

patient is told to live on a diet, and give up certain foods and drinks, he succumbs to the temptation, and consequently loses his life.

Nayuta—A very huge period of time

जहा य तिन्नि वणिजा मूलं चेत्तुण निगया ।
 एगोऽस्य लहर्ह लाभ एगो मूलेण आगओ ॥ १६ ॥
 एगो मूलं पि हारित्ता आगओ तस्य याणिओ ।
 यवहार उवमा एत्ता एव घम्मे वियाणह ॥ १७ ॥
 (३ 7 14 15)

16 & 17 Just as, for instance, three merchants (once) set out on their travels, each with his (own) capital one of them made a profit the second returned (only) with his capital, but the third merchant returned home having lost even his capital This parable is taken from common (everyday) life Know that it is even so in religion.

माणुसत्तं भवे मूलं लामी देवगर्ह भवे ।
 मूलच्छेपण जीवाण नरगतिरिक्खत्तण धुव्वं ॥ १८ ॥
 (३-7 16)

18 Human life is the capital profit is (comparable to) celestial existence through loss of the capital men are sure to be born either as denizens of hell, or as lower creatures.

एवं जियं सपेहाण तुलिया बालं च पट्ठियं ।
 मूलिय ते पवेसन्ति माणुसिं जोषिमेन्ति जे ॥ १९ ॥
 (३-7 19)

19 Considering thus the loss (that is likely to be incurred), one should weigh (the pros and cons, or

the consequences of the life led by) the ignorant and the wise, those, who are reborn again as human beings, may be said to have brought back (at least) their capital

Exp This parable is also taken from common life, and the application is also such that it can be understood by even a man in the street. And there in lies the beauty of the Āgama texts. The illustrations, parables, similes are all from common or everyday experience

वेमायाहिं सिक्खाहिं जे नरा गिहिसुब्बया ।

उवेन्ति माणुसं जोणिं कम्मसच्चा हु पाणिणो ॥ २० ॥

(उ० 7-20)

20 Those men who, through the exercise of various vows and disciplines, become pious householders (or householders practising well all the vows etc.), will (again) be born as human beings. For, all living beings, verily, reap the fruit of their (own) actions (Karman)

Exp Karman is the only real thing, all else is unreal, in that it does not help a man. According to the commentators, souls get human birth through four causes —

- (1) Prakṛtisubhadratā—Kind disposition
- (2) Prakṛtivinītatā—Love of discipline
- (3) Sānu-krośatā—Compassion (for all living beings)
- (4) Amatsarītā—Absence of jealousy.

जेसिं तु विउला सिक्खा मूलियं ते अद्विष्ट्या ।
सीलवन्ता सर्वसिंसा अवीणा जन्ति देवयं ॥ २१ ॥

(३ 721)

21 But those (men) of strong (rigorous) discipline, who practise excellent virtues (vows), and possess special (distinctive) good qualities, who are never depressed and dejected, can be said to have increased (multiplied) their capital and go to the world of celestial beings

कुसग्गमेत्ता इमे कामा सन्निरुद्धमि आउप ।
करस्स हेउं पुराकाउं जोगक्खेमं न संविदे ॥ २२ ॥

(३ 724)

22 In this very limited (span of) life (allotted to human beings), these worldly pleasures are but like (a dew-drop dangling on) the tip of a blade of grass ! For the sake of what (or with what object in view) then, does a man not care to comprehend (realise) the (value of) acquiring and protecting (the precious possession of) human life (and higher gain) ?

Exp Life is hemmed in - beset - with so many dangers and difficulties, and one can never tell when it will come to an end abruptly The so-called pleasures and enjoyments are but ephemeral It is like trying to catch a few stray drops of honey which may accidentally fall in the mouth of a man, who is clutching at a straw while about to fall in a well The straw is being gnawed at by rats. The man cannot come out of the well as there is a tiger and

a wild elephant waiting to make short work of him outside. At the bottom of the well, there is a huge boa-constrictor, with its mouth gaping wide to swallow the man the moment he falls down. As the wild elephant in its fury gives a blow to the Banyan tree near the well, the bee-hive is disturbed, and drops of honey from the honey-comb start dripping down. Even in that precarious situation, the man tries to lick the stray drops of honey that fall on his body. Human pleasures are also, likewise, precarious and of very short duration, and beset with dangers and calamities. This is the famous मधुकिन्दुदृष्टान्तः—The analogy of a drop of honey.

Yoga — New acquisition, getting something which one does not possess. Kṣema — Guarding or protecting something already acquired.

Man has already obtained human life. It is a precious acquisition and he should guard it very carefully. And he should also strive to achieve something more and higher, viz. divine life or liberation. But if he is blind to this, he will risk and lose his human birth for something which is trash, and then repent only when it is too late.

पच्छा वि ते पयाया स्त्रिप्यं गच्छन्ति अमरभयणां ।
जेसि पिओ तवो संजमो य खती य वंभचेरं च ॥ २३ ॥

(दृष्टा 4 28)

23 Those, who hold these things as very dear (in their heart, i.e. are keen on it), viz. austerities

self-control, forgivingness, and celibacy, they quickly reach the abodes of celestial beings, even if they have renounced the world late (i.e. late in life)

Exp If a man has the right frame of mind, if he makes a correct and proper choice then it does not matter whether he is a householder or a monk. The external marks and signs (Bāhyalinga) are immaterial. Such a householder is in reality a monk (Bhāvatah), and so even if he actually renounces the world late in life (i.e. in old age), he will attain heaven, or sometimes even Mokṣa (liberation)

इही शुर् जसो वण्णो आउ सुहमणुत्तरं ।

भुज्जो जत्थ मणुस्सेसु तत्थ से उववज्जरं ॥ १४ ॥

(३० 7 27)

24 He is again born as a human being, after his celestial life is exhausted (in a family) where there is prosperity and plenty, splendour (and glory), name and fame longevity, and eminent happiness

Exp Cp प्राण्य पुण्यवर्ता लोकावृषि वा शाश्वती समा ।

शुचीना धीमता गेहे योगव्रत्योऽभिजायते ॥ (मय० 6-41)

अकुट्टवओ णवं णत्थि कम्मं नाम विजाणइ ।

विज्जाय से महारवारे जेण जारं ण मिज्जइ ॥ १५ ॥

(६० 1 15 7)

25 He, who does not undertake any fresh acts, does not acquire any new (Karman) he knows the (nature of) Karman truly and well (thoroughly) Having thus thoroughly known and comprehended

(Karman and Nirjarā also), he becomes a great hero (on the battlefield of samsāra), and then he is neither born (again), nor does he die (again)

Exp Such a man, a great hero, destroys the enemies in the form of Karman, and is then freed from samsāra, as he has become victorious in the last battle Just as one must know the enemy fully, before attacking him, similarly one must know the true nature of Karman, and then only one can understand, and plan ways and means to destroy it Nirjarā—Destruction of Karman जाई = जायई ।

Naraka-vedanā Tortures in Hell

The concepts of heaven and hell are a necessary corollary of the belief in the transmigration of the soul. Every orthodox system of Indian Philosophy believes in the latter and so naturally in the existence of heaven and hell. We find, e.g. in our everyday life men being punished for crimes. And just as there are prisons here for the guilty and the criminals, even so there are supposed to be hells for those who are morally guilty, and who cannot be adequately punished in this world. Heaven is the reward for good actions, and hell the punishment for bad deeds.

नेरयत्ताप कम्मं पकरेत्ता नेरयत्तु उववज्जन्ति तं जहा—
महारभयाप, महापरिग्गहयाप, पंचिदियवहेणं, कुणिमाहारेणं ॥ १॥
(ओप० 56)

1 Living beings are born in hell because of their own karman. That (karman) is as follows —

- (i) By doing actions that involve great injury to living beings (e.g. waging a war, man-slaughter, etc)
- (ii) By amassing (illegitimately) vast possessions (that is possible only by depriving many others of their possessions)
- (iii) By killing five-sensed living creatures.
- (iv) By eating flesh.

Exp There are supposed to be seven hells, corresponding to seven earths. These hells are said to be situated below the Madhyaloka, and are enveloped in utter darkness.

जारिस्ता माणुस्ते लोए ताया दीसन्ति वेयणा ।

एत्तो अणंतगुणिया नरणसु दुक्खवेयणा ॥ २ ॥

(उ० 1973)

2 Oh father! the suffering of pain in hell is infinitely more (intense and) painful than the suffering as seen (i.e. experienced) in the world of men.

अच्छिनिमीलियमेत्तं नत्थि सुहं दुक्खमेव पडिबद्धं ।

नरण नेरइयाणं अहोनिंसं पच्चमाणणं ॥ ३ ॥

(जीवा० प्रति० 3395)

3 In hell, the hellish beings, who are tortured (and suffer for their actions) throughout day and night, get no happiness whatsoever, even for the duration of the winking of eyes, there is continuous (non-stop) misery and sorrow (in store for them).

अइसीयं अइउण्हं अइतण्हा अइक्खुहा अइभयं वा ।

निरण नेरइयाणं दुक्खसयाइं अविस्तामं ॥ ४ ॥

(जीवा० प्रति० 3395)

4 In hell the hellish beings have to suffer without break (or respite) hundreds of sorrows (and sufferings) like excessive cold, intense heat, intense thirst, intense hunger, and excessive fear.

जहा इह अगणी उण्हो इत्तोऽणतगुणो तर्हि ॥ ५ ॥

जहा इम इहं सीय इत्तोऽणतगुणे तर्हि ॥ ६ ॥

(उ 19 47-48)

5 & 6 Though fire be hot here, it is infinitely more so there Though there may be cold here, it is of infinitely greater intensity there (in hell)

छिंदंति घालस्स खुरेण नक्कं उट्ठे वि छिंदंति इवे वि कण्णे ।
जिम्म विणिक्कस्स विहत्थिमिच्च तिक्खार्हि सुलाहिऽमिताययंति ॥७॥
(सू० I 51 22)

7 They cut off the nose of the ignorant (sinner) with a razor, they also cut off his lips and ears pulling out his tongue a span's length they torment him (by piercing it) with sharp pikes.

Exp परमाहमिया - परमअघामिका । Just as there are wardens in prison, similarly there are these beings in hell who are in charge of hellish beings.

ते तिप्पमाणा तलसंपुब्बं य राहंदिअ तत्थ थणंति घाला ।

गलति ते सोणियपूयमसं पज्जोइया खारपइद्धिर्यगा ॥ ८ ॥

(सू I 51-23)

8. Those ignorant (sinners) dripping (with blood), shriek loudly day and night, like the dry leaves of palm trees (rustling in the wind) Their blood, matter (fat), and flesh are dropping off (from their bodies), while they are being roasted, and their bodies are being smeared with natron (salt)

रुहिरे पुणो घच्चसमुत्तिअगे मिन्नुत्तमगे यरिवत्तयंता ।

पयति णं वेरएण फुरंते सजीवमच्छे य अयोकयल्ले ॥ ९ ॥

(सू I 51 15)

9 And they turn the writhing hellish beings (victims) round, and stew them like living fish, in an iron caldron filled with their own blood (in their own juice), their limbs covered with ordure and their heads cut off

नो चेद्य ते तत्थ मसीभवन्ति ण मिज्जई तित्थभिवेयणाए ।
तमाणुभार्ग अणुवेदयन्ता दुक्खन्ति दुक्खी इह दुक्कडेणं ॥ १० ॥
(सू० I 5116)

10 And yet they are not reduced to ashes, nor do they die of their excessive tortures and pains, but experiencing and undergoing the punishment for their sinful actions, the miserable wretches suffer for their misdeeds

Exp If they were to die before suffering their term, they would escape the punishment, and so they are not allowed to die Just as a prisoner, awarded capital punishment or life sentence, is not allowed to commit suicide, because in that case the law does not have its revenge

ते णं तत्थ णिच्चं भीया णिच्चं तसिया णिच्चं ह्रुहिया
णिच्चं उद्विग्गा णिच्चं उपप्पुआ णिच्चं वहिया णिच्चं परममसुभ-
मउलमणुबद्धं निरयभवं पच्चणुभवमाणा विहरन्ति ॥ ११ ॥
(जीवा० प्रति० 3289)

11 They (hellish beings) live there in constant fear and alarm, always hungry and disgusted, always depressed, always wounded and bleeding, and always experiencing the agonies in hell, which is very evil, and firmly bound by bad karman

नरयणं मते । केयदयकालं त्रिं पञ्चता । गोयमा । जहन्नेन
वसवास्तसहस्रां उक्तासेन तेत्तीसं सागरोवमां ॥ १२ ॥

(जीवा = प्रति 33222)

12 O Revered Sir ! what is the duration of life of hellish beings ? O Gautama ! the minimum life of a hellish being is ten thousand years and the maximum is thirtythree Sāgaropamās.

Exp Palyopamā and Sagaropamā These are huge periods of time.

पयाणि सोच्चा णरगाणि धीरे न हिंसय किंचण सञ्चलोण ।
एतदिद्वी अपरिमहे उ बुज्झिज्झ लोयस्स वसं न गच्छे ॥१३॥
(सू. 15224)

13 A wise man, hearing (i.e. knowing) of these (tortures in) hells, should never kill any living beings in the whole world having firm faith (believing absolutely) in the true doctrine, and renouncing all possessions (and property) he should know (the right faith) and should never be a slave to the world (i.e. should never allow himself to be tempted by worldly things)

[XXXIV]

Śikṣāpāda : Discipline

इह मायुस्तए ठाणे धम्ममाराहिउं नरा ॥ १ ॥

(सू० I 15 15)

1 Here, in this world, men are (born) for practising (propitiating) religion

Exp What is, or what should be the purpose of human life ? The answer is — Practice of religion Man is the crown of creation, and is endowed with reason or Buddhi And he must, therefore, make the best of the opportunity

जाईमरणं परिन्नाय चरे संकमणे दढे ॥ २ ॥

(आचा० I 2 3)

2 Having (thoroughly) realised and understood (the cycle of) birth and death (i e samsāra), a man should live (move about), being firm in the rules of good conduct

कसेहि अप्पाणं जरेहि अप्पाणं ॥ ३ ॥

(आचा० I 4 3)

3 O Man ! emaciate yourself, and waste yourself (i e undergo physical hardships by austerities)

सद्व्यं सुचिण्ण सफलं नराणं ॥ ४ ॥

(उ० 13-10)

4 Every good deed done shall have its reward (will bear fruit) for men

Exp A good deed is never wasted But one must have faith and patience There are some actions which bear fruit immediately e.g. if a man jumps from a hill top or takes deadly poison the effect would be instantaneous But when a patient takes a tonic prescribed by his physician, he cannot expect any quick results Same is the case with good actions

सासय खलु सो कुणई जो मनो कुणई घर ।

जन्थेय गन्तुमिच्छेज्जा तत्थ कुव्विज्ज सासय ॥ ५ ॥

(३० १२६)

5 He, who builds a house (somewhere) on the way (i.e. before reaching his final destination), is doing a dubious thing (i.e. he has undertaken a risky venture) he should (better) build a permanent residence, only in the place where he wants to go

Exp If a traveller starts building a house for himself on his way, he is doing an unwise or imprudent thing. Even commonsense teaches us this much We are like travellers on this planet Our final destination is somewhere else

वेराई कुय्यद वेरी सओ वेरेहिं रज्जई ।

पायोवगा य आरमा दुक्खपासा य अन्तसो ॥ ६ ॥

(३१ १८७)

6 A hater goes on hating (others), (or a cruel man goes on indulging in cruelties) and then takes delight in his hatred (cruelties) But (he is not aware that all) harmful activities are sinful, and ultimately bring about (make him suffer) miseries.

10 There are some (opponents) who argue that pleasant things (effects) are obtained (only) from pleasant things (causes) But these men scorn (scoff at) the noble path, capable of the highest good

Exp The argument of the opponents is Like cause like effect From good, can be produced good, and from bad, only bad will result How can you, then, expect heavenly pleasures by giving all sorts of discomforts to your body ? Of course this is a diabolically wicked argument.

Jacobi quotes the following verse from the commentary purporting to belong to the Pustimārga (?) a Tantric sect of the Buddhists In that case our Gatha is a diatribe against them.

मनुज मोक्षं भुञ्जते मनुजं ह्यनात्मन ।

मनुजं हि जगदसि मनुजं सायं मुनी ॥

मा परं अवमन्त्रता अप्येणं लुपहा बहु ।

पयस्स उ अमोक्खाय अयोहारि ध्व जूरह ॥ ११ ॥

(स. I 347)

11 Do not, by disdaining this (right faith or path), lose (sacrifice) much for the sake of little By not discarding this (false faith or wrong path), you will repent later on, like one (merchant) who carried the load of iron

Exp This story is told in Rāyapasenajjam by Kesikumāra Samana to king Paesi. Some merchants started on a journey They first came upon a mine

of iron All of them took a load of iron with them and proceeded forward In due course, they came upon mines of copper, lead, silver, and finally gold All, except one merchant, discarded their previous burden in exchange for one more precious But one man would not discard the load of iron Now, just as because of his obstinacy and pig-headedness, he lost so much for so little, similarly people who cling to false faiths, will suffer a great loss

जहा य अंडप्यभवा बलगा अंडं बलागप्यभवं जहा य ।
 एमेव मोहाययणं खु तण्हा मोहं च तण्हाययणं वयन्ति ॥१२॥
 (सू० 32 6)

12 As a crane is produced from an egg, and an egg is produced from a crane, so they (the wise) say that desire is the origin (cause) of delusion, and delusion (in its turn) is the origin of desire.

Exp This is a vicious circle A man caught in this whirligig or eddies, must make a strenuous effort to get out of it, otherwise he is lost

पहमं नाणं तथो दया एव चिट्ठं सब्वसेजए ।
 अन्नाणी किं काही किं वा नाहिइ ॥ १३ ॥
 (दस० 4 10)

13 First there is (must be) knowledge, then (should follow) compassion (for living beings), then only can he obtain the status of a fully self-controlled monk What can an ignorantus do ?

Exp Knowledge is of paramount importance Unless he knows what is life and what is non-life, how will he be able to practise Ahimsa?

इहहा उ मुदादार्ह मुहाजीवी वि इहहा ।

मुदादार्ह मुहाजीवी वो वि गच्छन्ति सोमग ॥ १४ ॥

(दश 5 : 100)

14 Those who give for nothing (ie without any selfish motive), and those who receive for nothing, both these types are very rare (to be met with in this world) Both of them attain a good state of existence after death

Exp Just as there is grace in giving, so also there is grace in receiving. The giver, while giving, should give as a part of his duty, and should not expect *anything* in return. And the receiver also, no matter what and how much he receives, should accept it in the same spirit. Of course, this applies only to monks. They should not, in any way, undertake anything for their livelihood. This is to refute the doctrine of the Ājīvikas

अत्येव पासे कइ इप्पउत्तं काण्ण धाया अइ माणसेण ।

तत्येव धीरो पडिस्ताहरेज्जा आइण्णओ सिप्पमिय वललीणं ॥ १५ ॥

(दश सू 214)

15 The moment a monk sees (realises) that he has committed an evil act (or mis-behaved), either in thoughts, words or deeds, he should instantly withdraw himself (from it, or shrink from it) as a

noble horse (comes to a halt) instantly the reins
(are pulled)

Exp The moment he sees and realises his
mistake, he should immediately correct himself

सीहं जहा खुड्डुमिणा चरंता दूरे चरंती परिसंकमाणा ॥
एवं तु मेहावि समिक्ख भम्मं दूरेण पावं परिवज्जएज्जा ॥१६॥
(सू० I 10.20)

16 Just as the smaller (weak) animals keep
away from a lion, being afraid of him, even so a wise
man, discerning the religion, should keep himself
away (at a distance) from sin

Exp He should instinctively shrink from sin,
just as the smaller animals in the forest keep away
from a lion or a tiger

अलोयण निरवलावे आवर्हसु ददधम्मया ।
अणिस्तिओवहाणे य सिक्खा निप्पडि । ॥ १७ ॥
अण्णायया अलोभे य तितिक्खा अज्जवे सुई ।
सम्मदिट्ठी समाही य आयारे विणओवए ॥ १८ ॥
धिर्म्मई य संवेमे पणिही सुविहि संवरे ।
अत्तदोसोवसंहारे सज्जकामविरत्तया ॥ १९ ॥
पच्चक्खाणे विउस्सग्गे अप्पमादे लवालवे ।
झाणसंवरजोगे य उदए मारणंतिए ॥ २० ॥
संगाणं च परिण्णया पायच्छित्तकरणे वि य ।
आराहणा य मरणंते बत्तीसं जोगसंगहा ॥ २१ ॥

(सम० 32)

17 — 21 The following thirty-two योगसद्ग्रहs or
शिक्षापदs — Steps of Discipline — have been pointed
out by the wise , they are as follows —

(1) *Ālocana* Faithful confession of sins, committed knowingly or unknowingly before the preceptor

(2) *Nirapalīpa* Not to reveal *Ālocanā* to others.

(3) *Apatsu Drdha-dharmatā* Keeping firm faith in religion, even in times of distress and difficulties. To regard religion as the firm sheet-anchor

(4) *Anissṛita-upadhīna* To practise austerities without any ulterior motive Penance for the sake of penance

(5) *Śikṣā* Learning, training (discipline)

(6) *Nispratīkarmatā* Disregarding the body No toilet of the body or not to pamper it, even in illness etc no nursing

(7) *Ajnatatā* *Visiting only unknown houses and families on his begging round*

(8) *Alobha* Not to be greedy or desirous of good things or not to wish to have them more when obtained

(9) *Titikṣā* Patient suffering

(10) *Ārjava* Straightforwardness

(11) *Śucitā* Purity in penance. (It is *not* the bodily purity that matters, but *mental* purity)

(12) *Samyak-Dṛṣṭi* Righteousness Right Faith

(13) *Samādhi* Tranquility, peace of mind

(14) *Ācāra* Observance of the five-fold rules of conduct, i.e. the five great vows.

- (15) Vinayopeta Possessing humility, discipline
- (16) Dhṛtimatī Possessing courage, fortitude
- (17) Samvega Keen desire or craving for Mokṣa.
- (18) Pranidhī To have a balanced mind To remain calm and cool, com मायागन्ध न कार्यम्
- (19) Suvidhī To be meticulous in the practice of all the rules of monkhood
- (20) Samvara To guard one's self against the Āsravas To put a stop to them
- (21) Ātmadosa-upasamhāra Shrinking from, i.e. giving up all faults that are likely to cause harm to the soul
- (22) Sarva-kāma-viraktatā To be indifferent to all pleasures and enjoyments
- (23 & 24) Pratyākhyāna Complete renunciation of karman, and all worldly activities Com मूढगुणविषये उत्तरगुणविषये न ।
- (25) Vyutsarga — Kāyotsarga Abandoning all bodily care, and sitting or standing in one particular posture (Āsana), and to meditate on the self
- (26) Apramāda To be very careful and watchful against any transgression or violation of the rules and vows etc
- (27) Lavālave Doing prescribed duties at the proper or stipulated time

(28) Dhyana-samvara-yoga To train or discipline one's thoughts towards samvara—craving for Mokṣa

(29) Maranāntika ~ udaya To suffer patiently all sufferings and calamities even if they are likely to bring about his death

(30) Saṅga-parigṛhya Severing all contacts with former relatives, friends etc

(31) Prayascitta Expiation this is a corollary of Ālocana Mere oral confession will not do He must sincerely repent for the mistakes, and also undergo some expiation for them

(32) Āradhana (maranante) To be keen on propitiating the vows at the time of or until death

Exp A man may lead a very pious life But the last hour is very important If he does not die a peaceful and pious death then all his penance is wasted So he must strive to remain a good and pious monk *especially in his last moment* Cp

अन्तर्हाले च मायेव स्मर मुक्त्वा कलेवरम् ।

य प्रयाति स मद्भाव याति नास्त्यत्र संशय ॥ (भग० ८५)

नाणस्स सद्वस्स पणासणाप अन्नाणमोहस्स विवज्जणाप ।

रागस्स दोसस्स य संखण्णं पण्णास्तावस्स समुयेद मोक्खं ॥२॥

(उ ३२.२)

22. By the light of universal knowledge (omniscience) by the avoidance of ignorance and delusion by totally destroying love and hatred the soul attains Mokṣa which is (nothing but) absolute bliss.

से हु चक्खू मणुस्साणं जे कंखाए य अंतए ।

अंतेण खुरो वहई चक्कं अंतेण लोट्टई ॥ २३ ॥

(मू० I 15 14)

23 He, truly is the eye (guide) of men, who dwells on the end of desire (i.e. who has no desires), a razor runs on its edge (i.e. the razor's end or edge only is useful), and a wheel rolls (only) on its end (i.e. the rim)

अंताणि धीरा सेवंति तेण अंतकरा इह ॥ २४ ॥

(ह० I 15 15)

24 The wise resort to the ends of things (or take only rough and coarse food,) and hence they are called 'Makers of End' here (in this world)

Exp 'अत्तर'—Cp the title अतगडदसाओ—The Eighth Aṅga of the Jām Canon. It contains the stories of men who attained liberation in that very birth

अन—(1) The real nature of things (वस्तुस्वरूप),
(2) Rough and coarse things

षडे वयइ कोहेणे 171
 अंधिया पुतिया चेव 31
 आठकउय चेव अ० 97
 आणानिहेसररे 137
 आयरिय कुविये नन्वा 144
 आयरिएहि वाहिसो 142
 आयालुले पयामु 74
 आयावयाही चय 109
 आरभाओ भविरओ 200
 आलओ बीजणाइण्णे 90
 आलवते छवते वा 142
 आलोयण निरवळावे 231
 आवभा दीहमइधाण 227
 आसणगओ न पुच्छेज्जा 142
 आहच्च सवण लहुं 50
 आहारमिच्छे मियमे 106

इ वउरिदिवा एए 32
 इ बेईदिवा एए 30
 इड्डीगारविए एगे 145
 इड्डी जुई असो वण्णे 218
 इत्थीपुरिससिइवा य 13
 इम च मे अरिय इम 162
 इम सरीरं अणिल्लं 193
 इरिया मासेवणादाणे 120
 इत्ताअमरिसअतओ 200
 इह जीविए राम 206
 इह जीवियमेव पासदा 156
 इह जीविये अणियमेत्ता 211

इह माणुत्सए ठाणे 225
 इहमेणे उ भासन्ति 227
 इह लोए निण्णिवसत्स 134
 इन्द्रोवमाइया 31
 इंदियत्थे विवजिअत्ता 121

उच्चारं पासवणं 125
 उप्पणं नाइहील्लेज्जा 118
 उप्फालगदुट्ठवाह य 201
 उल्लो सुनकी य दो 151
 उवणेओ होइ ओणेसु 151
 उवसमेण हणे कोई 170

एए पाठकरे सुदे 181
 एकस्मिन् वमचेरे 88
 एण्णमूए अरण्णे वा 197
 एण्णाऽथेलए होइ 103
 एणे मूळं पि इरित्ता 214
 एमेए समणा मुत्ता 112
 एय छ माणिणो सारं 75
 एयं मिय सपेहाए 214
 एयं सकम्मवित्थिय 185
 एयाई कायाई प० 76
 एयाई अट्ठ ठागाई 123
 एयाओ अट्ठसमिईओ 120
 एयाओ पैव समिईओ (इत्ते) 126
 एयाओ पैव समिईओ अ० 129
 एयाणि सोळ्ळा णरणाणि 224
 एयं तु समणा एगे 103

एव कामेसं विज 156
 एव गुणसमाख्या 182
 एवं तु संजयस्सावि 42
 एवं धम्मं अकाळण 210
 एव धम्मं पि काळण 210
 एव धम्मं विस्वक्कम्म 207
 एव धम्मस्स विणओ 135
 एव माणुस्सगा कामा 213
 एवं लग्गन्ति दुस्मेहा 151
 एविन्दियत्वा य मणस्स 160
 एसा पवयणमाया 130
 ओराला तसा जे उ 29
 ओहोवहोवग्गदिय 124
 कणकुण्डग चट्ठाण 148
 कप्पासऽट्ठिठमिजा य 31
 कम्ममेगे पवेदेन्ति 183
 कम्मुणा वमणो होइ 181
 कसायपन्चस्सखणिणं 172
 कसिण पि ओ इम 99
 कत्तेहि अप्पाण 225
 कइं चरे कइं चिट्ठे 112
 कइं तु कुज्जा सामण्ण 105
 कहिं पडिहया सिद्धा 14
 कामकामी तल्ल जयं 157
 कामाणुगिद्धिप्पमव 157
 कामेहि य सव्वेहि गिद्धा 39
 फायगुत्तयाए णे भवे ! 129

कावोया जा इमा 133
 किण्हा नीला काळ तिप्पि 203
 किण्हा नीला य काळ य 199
 किण्हा नीला य रुहिरा य 23
 किमिणो सोमगला चेव 29
 कुक्कुडे सिंगिरीडी य 31
 कुसग्गमेता इमे कामा 216
 कुसग्गे जइ ओस० 165
 कुयुपिवीलिया दसा 30
 कूइयं रुइयं गीअ 90
 कोहविजएणं भंते ! 173
 कोइं माणं च मायं च 170
 कोहा वा जइ वा हासा 179
 कोहे माणे माया लोमे 85
 कोहे माणे य मायाए 123
 कोहो पीइ पणासेइ 170
 कोहो य माणो य 171
 खणमेतसोक्खा बहु० 153
 खल्लुका जारिसा जोच्चा 145
 खवित्ता पुन्वकम्माइ 62
 खिण्यं न सक्केइ विवेग० 164
 खेत्तं वत्थु हिरण्णं च 99
 गइलस्सणो उ धम्मो 4
 गत्तभूसणमिट्ठं च 90
 गम्माइ मिज्जन्ति पुया० 194
 गन्धेसु जो गिद्धिसुवेइ 159
 गात्थेहि य सव्वेहि 131

गवेत्तणाए गहणे य 123

गोमेज्जए य रुग्गे 23

चउरंग दुद्ध नच्चा 52

चउरिंदिया उ जे बीवा 31

चउम्बिहे वि जाहारे 111

चक्कत्तासा पडिडेहिता 124

चत्तुत्तफलत्तस्स 117

चत्तारि परमणाणि 49

चत्तारि वमे उया 115

चंदण-गेह्य दसगम्मे 23

चिन्ना घणं च भारियं 168

चिन्ना वित्तं च पुत्ते य 196

चित्तमिति न निज्जाए 92

चित्तमंतमचित्तं वा अ 179

चित्तमंतमचित्तं वा प 96

चित्तमंतमचित्तं वा (न गिण्हाइ) 179

चेत्ता कुप्पयं चउ• 195

छज्जीवकाए असमा• 108

छंदनिरोहेण उवेइ 164

छिंदति बालस्स चुरेण 222

जइ त काहिरी माव 93

जगनिम्बिण्णिं भूण्णिं 78

जणवयसम्मयठवणा 83

जणेण सद्धिं होवत्तामि 151

जनुकुम्मे जहा उवज्जोइ 91

जत्थेव पाने कइ 230

जम्म दुप्पल जरा दुप्पल 193

जामिणं जगइ पुढो जगा 38

जयं चरे जय चिट्ठे 112

जया कम्म पविताणं 69

जया गइ बहुविइ 66

जया चयइ सओग 67

जया जीवमजीवे 65

जया ओगे निहमिता 69

जया धुणइ कम्मरय 68

जया निर्विदिए भोए 67

जया पुण्णं च पावं च 66

जया मुण्णे भविताण 68

जया य चयइ धम्मं 134

जया लोगमछोर्गे च 69

जया सव्वसग नाणं 68

जया संवरमुक्किट्ठं 68

जरा आव न पीडेइ 71

जसं किंति सिछोवे च 227

जराभरणवेगेण 70

जत्सत्थि मळुणा सक्खं 206

जत्सेवमप्पा उ ह्वेज्ज 53

जइ मिठलेवालितं 44

जहा अगिसिहा वित्ता 133

जहाऽऽएसं समुदिस्स 212

जहा इदं जगणी उण्हो 222

जहा कागिणीए हेठं 213

जहा किपागफलाण 153

जहा कुक्कुळपोअस्स 92

जहा कुम्मे सज्जगाई 176

- जहा दहवाण बीयाणं 43
 जहा दुक्खं भरेव जे 134
 जहा दुमस्स पुप्फेसु 112
 जहा पोम्मे जले जायं 180
 जहा पिराळावसहस्स 92
 जहा भुगार्हि तरिउ 134
 जहा महाललापस्स 42
 जहा य सडप्पमया 229
 जहा य तित्ति वणिमा 214
 जहा खाहो तहा लोहो 172
 जहा सणमनालम्भि 103
 जहा सागडिओ जाणं 207
 जहा कुणी पुरूपणी 148
 जहा सई ससुत्ता 135
 जहा से खडु ओरुमे 212
 जहादिवागी वलणं 136
 जहिता पुनसंमोणं 180
 जहेइ सीहो य मिणं 205
 ज वि धत्थ व पायं वा 101
 ज मे बुद्धाणुमावन्ति 142
 जाइमरण परिश्रान 225
 जा जा वज्जइ रयणी (धम्मं) 71
 जा जा वज्जइ रयणी (अहम्मं) 71
 जायस्स जहामट्ठं 178
 जारिसा मम सीसा उ 146
 जारिसा माधुने छोए 221
 जाव न एइ जाएसे 212
 जिनदयणे अपुरत्ता 191
 जीवा येव क्षयीवा य 1
 जे आयरिउवज्जायाणं 137
 जे इह सायाणुता 150
 जे उ संगानकालम्भि 104
 जे केइ वाला इह 211
 जे केइ सरीरे सत्ता 150
 जे पावकम्मेहिं षणं 98
 जे ममाइकमाइ जहाइ 107
 जे व कते मिए भोए 107
 जे व चडे मिए यइवे 144
 जे य बुद्धा अतिक्कता 76
 जे य बुद्धा महामाणा (सुद्ध) 187
 जे य बुद्धा महामाणा (अमुद्धं) 187
 जे लक्खण सुविण 104
 जे विजवणादिअजोसिया 89
 जे सिया सविहीकामे 105
 जेसि तु विउला सिक्खा 216
 जो जीवे वि न याणाइ 64
 जो जीवे वि वियाणाइ 65
 जो न सज्जइ आगन्तुं 178
 जो पण्वइत्ताण 56
 जो सहस्सं सहस्साणं मासे 131
 जो सहस्सं सहस्साणं से 55
 ज्ञाग्गोणं समारुद्ध 187
 ठाणे निसीयणे चेव 128
 डहरा सुइदा य पासइ 205
 लईयं य जदत्तादाण 86

तसो पुट्ठो आयेकेण 152
 तसो से पुट्ठे परिषूडे 212
 तसो से मरणतम्मि 209
 तण्हामिभूयस्स 87
 तत्थ पेनविह नार्ण 59
 तत्थिमे पढमे ठाण 79
 तमाहु छोए पडिबुद्ध 131
 तम्हा एएसि कम्माण 42
 तम्हा एयासि केसाण 204
 तम्हा से न सिणायति 110
 तवस्सिस्स किस्स दन्त 178
 तथेसु वा उत्तम 88
 तवो य दुविहो घुतो 61
 तसपाणे वियाणेत्ता 179
 तस्सेस मग्गो गुरु 62
 तहा पयणुवाई य 202
 तहेय भत्तपाणेसु 102
 तद्देव सावग्गज्जग्गो 81
 ते एक्को तुच्छसरीरमे 194
 ते येव तडिवमुक्क 44
 ते ठाण सासय सास 18
 ते देहवास भसुदे 118
 ते मा न सुभे देवा 197
 ते सच्चं मयव 80
 ते से भद्विमाए 74
 तिण्णो हु सि अण्णव 168
 तुलियाण मात्तमाव 177
 तेणानि जं कम्म कम्म 210
 तेहदिया उ जे जीवा 30

तेऊ पम्हा सुक्का 203
 तेऊ वाऊ य बोद्धव्वा 27
 तेने जहा संधिमुहे गहिए 40
 ते ण तत्थ भिच्च 223
 ते तिप्पमाणा तल 222
 यमा व कोहा व मय 186
 थावरं जगम चेव 99

दग्गओ छेतओ चेव 121
 द'वओ चक्खुसा पेहे 121
 दन्विए वंघणुम्मुकके 185
 दंतसोहणमाइस्स 86
 दाराणि या सुया चेव 194
 दिव्वमाणुसतेरिच्छे 179
 दुज्जए कामभोगे य 94
 दुम्मवराए वंहुयए 165
 दुब्बहा उ सुहावाई 230
 दुब्बहे खल्ल माणुसे मने 165
 दुहा येयं सुयक्खवां 188
 दुविहा भाऊ जीवा उ 24
 दुविहा तेऊजीवा उ 28
 दुविहा पुडवीजीवा उ 19
 दुविहा वाडजीवा उ 28
 दुविहा से मने 84
 दुहा वणस्सईजीवा 25
 देवओणत्तमाणो य 102
 देवदाणवगयव्वा 89
 देवार्ण मशुयार्ण य 82
 देवा चउध्विहा वुत्ता 84

दशधनपेसकगोष्ठ 96

धम्मगिज्ज च ववहार 148

धम्म लब्धं मित्तं काले 94

धम्मसत्ताए ण भते 192

धम्मं दि हु सद्दहन्तवा 167

धम्मो अहम्मो आगास का 1

धम्मो अहम्मो आगास दम्भे 3

धम्मो मंगलमुक्किट्ठ 72

धिर्दग्दे य उवेगे 231

न कम्मसु कम्म सवेन्ति 176

न काममोघा समय 160

न कोण आचरिय 149

न विता ताम्र ए भासा 175

न तस्स दुक्खे विमयन्ति 195

न तं अरो ऋच्छेता 56

न पक्खओ न पुरओ 141

न च वुरगद्विष कई 116

न यो लभेज्जा निज्जे 107

न वि मुञ्चिण समज्जे 180

न सत्तर्हति मरणेते 209

न सो परिग्गहो सुतो 101

नादवाइस्स द्विचण 74

नाणस्स सन्वस्स पयासणाए 234

नाणस्साचरिगिज्जे 45

नाण य दसण वेव (एवमग्ग) 58

नाण य दसण वेव (वीरिय) 10

नाणेण जाणई भावे 58

नाइस्सग्गिस्स नाण 60

नापुट्ठो वागरे किञ्चि 141

नामकम्म च गोथे च 45

नामकम्मं तु दुविह 45

नारीसु नोवगिज्जेज्जा 117

नासीडे न विसीले 138

निक्खम्ममाणाइ अ 115

निज्जुद्धिक्कण आहार 109

निद् च न वहु 108

निद्वसपरिणामो 200

निम्नामो निरहंकारो नि० 108

निम्नामो निरहंकारो वी० 110

निष्ठाण ति सव्वाह ति 17

नित्तगुणएतसई 188

नित्तन्ते सिया अमु० 140

नित्तकिय-निद्धखिय 189

नीयावितो अचवडे 201

नीहरन्ति मय पुत्ता 195

नेरदयाण भते 1 केवह० 224

नेरदया सत्तविहा 38

नेरदयाणाए कम्म 220

नो इदियगेज्ज 55

नो वेव ते तस्य 223

नो तासु अक्खं संवेज्जा 90

पञ्चक्खणो विज्जसग्गे 231

पञ्चा वि ते पयाया 217

पडम नाण तसो दया 229

पणीवे मत्तपानं तु 93

पण्डिण वीरिये लब्धु 186

पत्तैअसरीरामो 25
 पमाय कम्ममाहंसु 162
 पयणुकोह माणे य 202
 परिग्रहनिनिद्वाण 98
 परिज्जूई ते सरीरय 167
 परिक्खय ते अणि 97
 पल्लोयाणुदया चेव 29
 पवेयए भज्जरय 116
 पैकामा य घूमाना 33
 पचासवप्पवतो 200
 पबिदियतिरिक्खा उ 33
 पबिदिया उ जे जीवा 32
 पबिदियाणि कोह 56
 पायच्छित्तं विणओ 61
 पियधम्मं ददधम्मो 201
 पुढवी भाउजीवा य 19
 पुढवी य भाऊ अण्णी 76
 पुढवी य सक्करा बाह्णया य 23
 पुढवी साली अवा चेव 171
 पुरिसा अत्ताणमेव अभिनिगिस्स 57
 पुरिसा सच्चमेव स० 80
 पुरिसोरम पावकम्मण 154
 योगगळण परीणाम 95
 फासस्स ओ गिद्धिमुवेइ 159
 बन्धप्यमोक्खो जल्लसत्थेव 197
 बद्धं क्व मुण्णिओ मई 118
 बह्वं मुणेइ कण्णेहि 116
 बमचेर उत्तमतव 88

धायरा जे उ पज्जता (उ०) 38
 धायरा जे उ पज्जता (साहा०) 28
 धायरा जे उ पज्जता (सण्हा) 22
 धायरा जे उ पज्जता (सुट्थो०) 24
 धायरा जे उ पज्जता (साहा०) 2०
 बालमरणानि बहुसो 209
 बाळण अकाम तु 208
 बेईदिया उ जे जीवा 29
 भावणाओगमुदधप्पा 193
 भावेसु ओ गिद्धिमुवेइ 159
 भासमाने न मातेज्जा 139
 भिम्बालसिए एमे 146
 भोवा माणुस्सए भोए 52
 मणुत्तयाए ण भंते 128
 मणसा वयसा चेव 184
 मणुया बुविहमेया उ 34
 मणो छाहसिओ भीमो 127
 मरिद्धिणि राय जया 70
 महुकारसमा सुद्धा 118
 माइणो कन्द माया य 184
 मा एय अवमन्नता 228
 मा पलियस्सेव कस 140
 माणविजएण भंते 173
 माणुसत्तम्मि आवाओ 51
 माणुसत्त मवे मूळं 214
 माणुस्सं च अण्णिव 205
 माणुस्सं विण्णं लण्णं 49

मा पच्छ असाधुया 212
 माया पिया ण्डुसा भाया 196
 मायाविजएण भन्ते । 173
 माने मासे तु जो घाडो 176
 माइणा खसिया वेसा 98
 भिच्छादसणरत्ता 191
 मुहु मुहु मोइणुणे 160
 मूलाओ खण्णमवो 135
 मूळमेयमहम्मस्स 89

रसए पडिए सास 147
 रसेसु जो गिद्धिमुवेइ 159
 रायदोसस्सिया बाला 175
 रानो य दोसो वि य 43
 रुद्धिरे पुणो वच्च 222
 रुवे अतिते य परि 87
 रुवे विरतो मणुओ 158
 रुवेसु जो गिद्धिमुवेइ 157

लक्ष्ण वि आरियत्तण 166
 लक्ष्ण वि उत्तमे सुद्ध 167
 लामात्तामे सुद्धे दुक्खे 109
 लोमुत्तम च वयमिण 88
 लोमविजएणं भते । 174

वत्तणालयणो काडो 6
 वत्तणममलंकार 107
 वयमुत्तयाए न भते । 129
 वर मे अप्पा दतो 54
 वरुया पञ्चया कुष्णा 25

वंके वंकसमायारे 201
 वाह्याकवळे चेव 133
 वाहिओ वा अरोगी वा 110
 वाहेण जहा य विच्छए 156
 विणयं पि जो उवाएण 136
 वित्थिण्णे दूरमोगाडे 125
 वित्तं पसवो य नाइओ 175
 वित्ते अबोइए निच्चं 139
 वित्तेण ताण न छमे 100
 विभूसं परिवज्जेज्जा 94
 विभूसा इत्थिसंस्सगी 93
 विथाणिया दुक्ख 100
 विरए गामधम्मोहि 76
 विरजमाणस्स 161
 विवत्ती अविणीयस्स 137
 विसएसु मणुप्पेसु 95
 वेमायाहि सिक्खाहि 215
 वेराइ कुब्बइ वेरी 226
 वोळ्ळिइ सिणेइ 167

सचा तहेव मोसा य (मणुत्ती) 126
 सच्चा तहेव मोसा य (वज्जुत्ती) 127
 सत्थमेगे तु सिक्खंता 184
 स देवगन्धर्वमणु 144
 सईअयार-उज्जोओ 10
 सदे रुवे य गधे य 94
 सदेसु जो गिद्धिमुवेइ 158
 सन्तिमे य दुवे टाणा 208
 सन्तिमे सुहुमा पाणा 111

समवाए समणो होइ 181
 समया सम्बभूएछु 77
 सम्मईसणरत्ता 191
 सम्मदिट्ठी जीवो 192
 सर्व तिवायए पाणे 75
 सरागे बीयरारो वा 202
 सरीरमाहु नावति 53
 सङ्गे कामा विस कामा 153
 सवजीवाण कम्म तु 36
 सम्बत्थुवहिणा मुद्धा 101
 सम्बे जरे जइ तुह 196
 सम्बे तओ जाणइ 161
 सम्ब विलविय गीय 154
 सम्ब बुधिण्ण सफल 225
 सवाहारं न भुंजति 111
 सम्बे जीवा वि इच्छति 79
 सम्बे भाणा पिदाठया 74
 सम्बे सयकम्मकप्पिया 39
 सम्बेहिं भूएहिं दया 117
 सह समदए णच्चा 185
 संगारं च परिणयाया 231
 संतिमे सुहुमा पाणा (च) 110
 सतता केसलोएणं 104
 सेवारं फलं पीठ 125
 सवुज्झह ! किं न पुज्झह 155
 सवुज्झमाणे ठ नरे 75

संगमसमारंभे (काय) 128
 संभसमारंभे (मण) 127
 संमसमारंभे (वरं) 128
 संसयं खलु सो कुणइ 226
 संसारत्था ठ जे जीवा 19
 संसारत्था य सिंघा य 12
 सादरे हत्थपाए य 127
 साहारणसरीराओ 25
 सीह जहा सुइमिणा 231
 सुई न लइं सइयं च 50
 सुक्कज्ञाणं सियाएग्ग्या 105
 सुक्कमूले जहा वक्खे 43
 सुणिया मार्वं साणस्स 148
 सुतेपु मावी पडिबुद्धं 163
 सुवक्कसुद्धिं समु 81
 सुवण्णहप्पस्स ठ 100
 से जाण अजार्ण वा 57
 से हु अक्ख मणुस्सार्णं 235
 सोच्चा जाणइ कज्जार्णं 64
 सो वि अंतरमासिओ 148
 सोही उज्जुवमूयस्स 51
 हत्थपायपडिच्छिन्न 91
 हत्थं पाये च काय च 141
 हत्थासया इमे कामा 151
 हरियाळे दिगुलए 23